



E 2794



























A METROPOLITAN POLICE CONSTABLE (NIGHT DUTY).

# POLICE!

CHARLES TEMPEST CLARKSON

(THIRTY-THREE YEARS AN OFFICER OF POLICE)

AND

J. HALL RICHARDSON

(JOURNALIST ON ONE OF THE LONDON DAILIES).

## ILLUSTRATIONS:

*A Metropolitan Police Constable (night duty); Burglars' kil, p. 312 ;  
Prisoners being photographed for "The Rogues' Gallery," p. 359.*

London :

FIELD AND TUER, THE LEADENHALL PRESS, E.C.  
SIMPKIN, MARSHALL & CO. ; HAMILTON, ADAMS & CO.  
NEW YORK : SCRIBNER AND WELFORD.



FIELD & TUCK,  
THE LEADENHALL PRESS, E.C.  
(T. 4376)

## PREFACE.

THERE is a good deal of unnecessary mystery about the police. It leads to considerable misunderstanding. Official reticence has been fostered by successive Home Secretaries, but this policy of secrecy may not altogether be of benefit to the public. Certainly there are some disadvantages. For example, the police have had no historian. There is not an officer in the metropolitan force, at all events, who dares place on record a faithful account of the service to which he belongs. Consequently the public are dependent for their information upon incomplete intelligence in the daily press, supplemented by casual magazine articles and spasmodic "revelations," all more or less garnished with fiction.

The authors do not propose lightly to assume the burden, which has accumulated weight during sixty years. The limits of a single volume would not suffice to contain the complete chronicles of the police; but the writers have co-operated to sketch in broad outlines the constitution of our guardianship of the peace. They have entered somewhat into detail in regard to

the metropolitan force, not merely for the guidance of the hundreds of recruits who annually flock into London from the provinces, but because the police of the capital, governed as they are by the Secretary of State, and not by the people, occupy a position which has been repeatedly assailed, and which will, no doubt, be attacked again and again until the responsibility of direction is transferred to the representatives of the ratepayers.

With respect to the provinces, exigencies of space have compelled the adoption of a general treatment, for it was obvious that if every large centre of population had been considered in detail, the result would have been an unmanageable volume, far too bulky for general use. Fortunately, however, the same principles govern all police forces, the points of differences being confined to local organization and administration. No injustice is, therefore, done to Liverpool, Manchester, or Birmingham by the omission of their names, so long as their fundamental principles are duly stated.

Some apology is demanded, however, for the absence of chapters upon the Irish and Scotch police. The materials which have been collected for these have been intentionally reserved to form the basis of a future work, in which it will be possible to recognize fully the claims of the Royal Irish Constabulary to special consideration.

In the present effort, the aim has been to trace the origin of the English constabulary, to set forth the plans which Sir Robert Peel devised, and then, lightly

passing over the intervening period, to give a truthful account of the existing methods in so far as they interest the public at large. The illustrative incidents, which are purposely left uncoloured, are drawn from the personal experience of a police officer of many years' standing, and of that of a journalist whose daily duty has brought him into contact with police of all ranks. It has been necessary to expose some "secrets of the police," but care has been taken not to jeopardize public interest by misplaced communicativeness. Furthermore, the authors disclaim having been animated by a spirit of carping criticism. On the other hand, they are convinced of the desirability of perfect confidence between the people and their guardians. Whilst we look to soldiers and sailors to protect the nation from invasion, it is the constable on his beat who is responsible for the safety of our lives and property against the attacks of internal foes. Civil power is constantly at war with crime. The conflict becomes the less unequal when the citizen is forewarned, and therefore forearmed, to meet the dangers to which he is exposed. Until all evil is overcome with good the struggle will continue between the strong and the weak, the crafty and the simple, the vicious and the innocent. The conscientious constable may be of infinite value to the community. To raise the moral standard of the police, to cultivate a friendly feeling towards them, to make firm the touch between the constable and the citizen are some of the objects which it is hoped this book will serve. With the householder on the alert to discover imposture, the



policeman assured of public support, and the thief plainly told of the risks of detection and betrayal, there may be some chance of bringing about common good.

The authors express their thanks to Mr. Monro, the Commissioner of Metropolitan Police; to Mr. Pennefather, the Receiver; and to many police officers throughout the country for the cordial encouragement and assistance which has been given in the preparation of "Police!"

# CONTENTS.

## CHAPTER I.

### UNDER WATCH AND WARD.

	PAGE
Ancient constables—Statute of Winchester—Marching watch of Henry VIII.—Street-lighting—The Muns—A thieves' academy (1585)—Mull'd Sack, the chimney-sweep—Swindlers' tricks—Origin of the confidence trick—Jonathan Wild—Thief-maker and thief-taker—Blood-money—Citizen police (1780)—Brutal pastimes—Cock-fighting—Mystery of thief-catching—Haunts of rogues in London—Highwaymen—Dick Turpin—Death penalties—Halifax Gibbet Law	...
	I

## CHAPTER II.

### OLD LONDON CHARLIES.

"Hang out your lanterns"—The Dogberry race—Old Hobson and the Lord Mayor—Defoe's criticism—London Charlies (eighteenth century)—Anecdotes of their habits and failings—In league with thieves—Pearson's attack—"Past eleven o'clock"—An old song—Decadence of the Charlies	...
	21

## CHAPTER III.

### UNDER THE MAGISTRACY.

Police Bill of 1792—"Basket justices"—Establishment of police courts in London—Duties of magistrates and their officers—Imperfections of the system—Local police—City of London force—Increase of receivers of stolen property—Spitalfields in 1822—Underground thieves' dens—Special constables—A "bear-bait"—No detective machinery—Scale of rewards—"He does not weigh forty pounds yet"—Tyburn tickets	...
	33

# CHAPTER IV.

## BOW STREET RUNNERS AND PATROLES.

	PAGE
Bow Street Police Office—The two Fieldings—"Sky farmers"—Horse patrol—Keeper of the Criminal Registers—Dismounted patrols—Peel's day patrol—Vaughan's traps—Bow Street runners—Opinion of Dickens—"Robin Redbreasts"—A sketch of Townsend—A policeman worth £20,000—Anecdotes—Court detectives—A distressed bather—Sayer's assurance—Quackery of Bow Street—"Flash" houses—Correspondence between thieves—Vickery's struggle with murderers—Donaldson's "Take care of your pockets"—Ruthven's capture of Thurtell—Cato Street Conspiracy—Townsend's view of the gibbet	42

# CHAPTER V.

## PEEL'S POLICE.

Introduction of the new police (1829)—The necessity for reform—First principles—Establishment of Scotland Yard head-quarters—Objections to proposals—Duke of Wellington's reminiscences—"Peelers"—Outlines of the new system—The last of the watch-boxes—Uniform—Duties of all grades defined—Crying the hour forbidden—Politeness to all insisted upon—Germs of the present code—"The blue devils"—A poetical defence of the superseded Charlies—Complaints of vestrydom—Reply of the commissioners—"Must not talk to the cook"—"Move on"—Is the "frog's march" justifiable?—Collision at Coldbath Fields—Plain clothes "spies"	59
--	----

# CHAPTER VI.

## METROPOLITAN POLICE OF TO-DAY.

Successors of Sir Richard Mayne—Colonel Sir E. Henderson—Growth of the force—Strike (1872)—Appointment of Sir Charles Warren (1886)—Reorganization plans—Chief constables and assistant chief constables created—Augmentation of mounted branch—Rearrangement of divisions—Sub-divisional inspectors—Disposition of the police by day and by night—Beats—Standard of height raised—Candidates' Section House—Sir Charles Warren defends drill—Type of modern police station—Pay of all ranks—Pension—Cost of police per man—How the money is spent—The new code—Sir Charles Warren resigns (1888)—"Sorry for the new man"	79
---	----

## CHAPTER VII.

### WITHIN THE CITY OF LONDON.

	PAGE
The Watch Act police—Marshals and marshalmen—City Police Act of 1839—Jealousy of Sir George Grey and Sir R. Mayne—The City vindicated—Politeness a characteristic—The chiefs—Stations—No. 26, Old Jewry—City detectives—The brothers Forester—Differences of uniform—Pay good, but no pension—The City purse—Traffic of London—Foreign hawkers—Civic festivities—Jubilee Ball—Attack upon the Mansion House (1882) ... ..	104

## CHAPTER VIII.

### RIVER AND DOCKYARD POLICE.

Origin of the Thames Police—The Marine Office (1798)—Ballantine's experiences—Systematic pillage—"Light horsemen"—The Thames Police Office—River police transferred—Minimum of crime—Sewage pollution—"Found drowned"—Run down—The dockyards—Fire drill—Powder Magazine ... ..	119
--	-----

## CHAPTER IX.

### SCOTLAND YARD AND THE HOME OFFICE.

Scotland Yard—The Home Secretary and his prerogatives—Government control of Metropolitan Police—The position of Commissioner—Whitehall Place—The new Central Police Offices—The Receiver's duties—Public Prosecutor and police—Home Office and the provincial police ... ..	127
---	-----

## CHAPTER X.

### PROVINCIAL POLICEMEN.

Class of men required—Natural qualifications—Course of training in the provinces—Sworn in—On the beat—Lodgings—The barracks—The sergeant the "backbone of the force"—Duties of an inspector in town and country—Superintendents and their responsibilities—One of the old style—Reporting his superior—Deputy chief constable—Chief constables—Anecdotes—Surgeon of police—A "dead" man in the flue ... ..	
--	--

## CHAPTER XI.

## PAGES FROM MY DIARY.

	PAGE
Desperate burglar—A struggle with a convict—An exciting chase— Tom Sayers and the police—The battle with Heenan—John Leech at Whitby—"Found drowned"—Tender memories— "Marks"—A contract of separation—The cells—"Wolf Holds" —Naughty boys—In court—"Kiss the book"—A provincial police station—An arbitrator—Scenes before the inspector's desk —Lost little one—The maternal instinct ... ..	154

## CHAPTER XII.

## HOW THE QUEEN IS PROTECTED.

Her Majesty's alarms and escapes—Superintendent Hayes arrests Roderick Maclean at Windsor in 1882—Method of police salute —The Jubilee ceremonials—Police and public—The opinion of the late Emperor of Germany—Ambulance duties—Supposed infernal machine at Windsor—Fishing-rods and horse medicine	166
---	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

## PARLIAMENTARY POLICE.

Care of the Houses of Parliament—Warren's order—Change of police—Disappearance of old faces—Night watch—Sittings' watch—Admission of strangers—Mr. Denning's experiences— Alteration of rules—Break-down of the system—Jubilee plot— New proposals—Serving warrants within the precincts—Com- mittee of privilege—Protecting statesmen—Political police— Election duties—The hustings—The ballot ... ..	172
---	-----

## CHAPTER XIV.

## DYNAMITE.

Local Government Board explosion (1883)—Nitro-glycerine at Bir- mingham—The Gallagher gang—District Railway attacked— Part of Victoria Station destroyed (1884)—The clock-pistol—A scheme to blow up railway stations—Arrest of Daley at Birken- head—Scotland Yard, Junior Carlton, and St. James's Square explosions—Nelson Column (May, 1884)—London Bridge affair —Gower Street explosion (January, 1885)—Tower of London and Houses of Parliament attacked (January, 1885)—Arrest of Cunningham—The brown box—Arrest of Burton—Piecing evidence—Unmasking the conspiracy—Convictions ... ..	186
---	-----

# CHAPTER XV.

## MOBS.

PAGE

The Socialists—Early gatherings—Riots of February, 1886—Compensation Act—Disturbances of spring, 1887—The origin of the Trafalgar Square meetings (1887)—Vacillation of the Government—Misapplied philanthropy—The Socialists again—Vagrancy—Street processions—"We will have work or bread"—The first conflict—The "frog's march"—Hyde Park—Riding the orators down—More fighting—Government dilemma—Arrest of a newspaper correspondent—Meetings prohibited—Demonstration of the clubs (November 13)—Charging the square—Arrest of loafers—Military called out—Riot Act—List of the wounded—Warren's proclamation—Specials enrolled—Hyde Park (November 20)—Renewed attempts at disorder in 1889	198
--	-----

# CHAPTER XVI.

## SOME FORMS OF VICE.

Race-courses—Some swindlers—Got-up prize-fights—Running grounds—Dog races—How started—Prize-fighting—Police protected by pugilists—Theatres—Music-halls—Dancing-rooms—Licensed victuallers	219
--	-----

# CHAPTER XVII.

## FIRE !

Relations between the police and brigades in the metropolis—Some acts of bravery—Telephonic communication—How brigades are composed in the country—A harvest for pickpockets—Don't drink—A courageous rescue—The use of sand	229
--	-----

# CHAPTER XVIII.

## COMMON LODGING-HOUSES.

Nomadic population—"Sanctimonious bard"—"Universal curer"—"Constitution keeper"—"Irish busker"—"Dry-land jacks"—"Sitting mumpers"—Other frequenters—"Padding kens," "dossing cribs," etc.—A wife murderer arrested—Smart detection—Children in lodging-houses—A queer customer—A summons-server nonplused—Where broken food is taken—Indiscriminate almsgiving—Model lodging-houses—Police supervision—Whitechapel and Westminster—"Doubles"—The Act of 1851	235
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIX

## IN THE STREETS.

The traffic of London—Accidents—Privileged cabs—"Crawlers"—Public carriage department—Regulations and inspection—Licensing—Drivers—Test questions—"Poor Man's Corner"—"California"—Lost articles restored—Pirate 'buses—Some tricks—Costermongers—Michael Angelo Taylor's Act—Mad dogs—Runaway horses—Smoke Jacks—Weights and measures—Fraudulent tradesmen—Warnings to the public	PAGE 247
--	-------------

## CHAPTER XX.

## CRIMINAL INVESTIGATION.

Early history of the detective police—Charles Dickens describes them in 1842—The present department and its history—Sketches of the leading detectives—The conspiracy case of 1877—Criminal Investigation Department established (1878)—Mr. Howard Vincent's account of it—Sir Charles Warren as detective—Mr. Vincent's reply—Sir William Harcourt declares there is no mystery in the detection of crime—The Black Museum and its ghastly relics—Peace, the burglar—Gamblers' appliances—Mr. Matthews lays down the theory of rewards	259
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXI.

## ON THE TRACK OF A MURDERER.

Police procedure—Detective instinct—Local inspectors—Unromantic men—Suggested reforms—Step by step—Statements—Theories—Coroner's court—Police surgeons—Dangers of publicity—"Jack the Ripper"—The press and police—Lefroy's portrait—Currell's escape—Magisterial examination of prisoners—How a fugitive criminal was traced—Deceiving the coroner—Murder does not "out"—Circumstantial evidence	272
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXII.

## "FROM INFORMATION RECEIVED."

The usual formula—How information is given—A coining family—A pocket-picking preacher—Prisoners betray their accomplices—The German Embassy plot—A jealous woman trapped into confession—£365 hidden in a pair of bellows—Police "shadowing"—Police "informations"—Pawnbrokers' lists—Telegraphs and street alarms—The <i>Police Gazette</i> —Police portraiture—The Dublin <i>Hue and Cry</i> —Backing warrants—How they are served
--

# CHAPTER XXIII.

## BURGLARS, ARMED AND OTHERWISE.

	PAGE
The class who use revolvers—Orrock—Double patrols—Peace, the burglar—His strange career—Wright and Wheatley—Murder of Inspector Simmons—Sergeant Barker—Jackson at Strangeways—Muswell Hill outrage—Curious detections—A "professional"—The safe burglary—Where cracksmen hide their tools—Mr. Vincent's views—Mr. Monro's warning—How burglaries are "put up"—The method fully explained—The receiver—Clever arrests—The pigeon-cote—"Flying the kite"—A dictionary of thieves' slang ... ..	305

# CHAPTER XXIV.

## FORGERS.

Forgery once a capital offence—Vaughan executed (1758)—Mathison (1779)—Old Patch (1786)—Fauntleroy forgeries—Maynard the last to be executed (1829)—How I traced bank forgers—Mode of identification—Forgeries on the Bank of England (1873)—Tracking a post-office forger ... ..	324
---	-----

# CHAPTER XXV.

## THIEVES AND SHARPERS.

Outwitting thieves—Tricks of thieves—"Swell mobsmen"—Long firm frauds—Artful dodgers—A thief robbing a thief—"Buzzing the tenner"—"Sleeping" purses—Watch "hookers" and "snatchers"—"Gunners" and "grasshoppers"—"Snow-drop-pers"—Shoplifters, or "bouncers"—"Silkworms"—"Ready-placers"—"Coshers" and "trippers"—Black-mailers—Swindling advertisers—"Ringing the changes"—Taproom cracksmen—The "puller-up"—Fences—Horse thieves ... ..	339
---	-----

# CHAPTER XXVI.

## CONVICT SUPERVISION.

Transportation—Tickets of leave—Garroting—Change of system—Convict supervision—The office at Scotland Yard—Prisoners' aid societies—Methods explained—Verifying descriptions—"For failing to report"—Habitual criminals' register—The portrait albums—Photographed against his will—License-holders—Prisoners' property—A strange collection ... ..	354
---	-----



## CHAPTER XXVII.

## CONCLUSION.

Black sheep—Police and public—Charges of perjury—The constable's evidence—Preventing crime—Rewards—Injuries—Diseases—Convalescent Fund—Medal—Police Orphanage—Bands—Festivals—Pensioners' Corps—Faithful service	PAGE ... 362
--	-----------------

# POLICE!



## CHAPTER I.

### UNDER WATCH AND WARD.

Ancient constables—Statute of Winchester—Marching watch of Henry VIII.—Street-lighting—The Muns—A thieves' academy (1585)—Mull'd Sack, the chimney-sweep—Swindlers' tricks—Origin of the confidence trick—Jonathan Wild—Thief-maker and thief-taker—Blood-money—Citizen police (1780)—Brutal pastimes—Cock-fighting—Mystery of thief-catching—Haunts of rogues in London—Highwaymen—Dick Turpin—Death penalties—Halifax Gibbet Law.

IT will be necessary to go back to very early days to trace the origin of the English police system. We still call the units of the force "constables," and, according to several authorities, their office is as old as the monarchy of England, and certainly existed in the times of the Saxons.

It may be dated with some degree of certainty from the Assize of Arms issued by Henry III. in 1252, which requires that a high constable should be "constituted" for every hundred or vill, and a petty constable for every parish, their duty being to summon the inhabitants to quell a disturbance of the peace, and to hand over the offenders to the charge of the sheriff. By this Act, regular watchmen were established in

cities, borough towns, and hundreds, and the right was given to a person plundered to recover damages from the local guardians of the district in which the loss occurred.

The famous Statute of Winchester in 1285 enacted that two high constables should be chosen in every hundred and franchise, and should report to the king's justices, and "all suspicious night-walkers" were ordered to be arrested and detained by the watch. This watch was, probably, the survival of the armed force which was formerly employed for the protection of fortified towns, to give notice of the approach of friend or foe. When the necessity for its existence disappeared, owing to the advent of more peaceful times, the martial guard no doubt degenerated into a civilian sentinel.

There are records of a nightly watch in the City of London, as early as 1263, prior to the Statute of Winchester. In the year preceding the establishment of this watch, the citizens of London appear to have been the means of bringing discredit upon their nightly patrol. The "*Chronicles of the Mayors and Sheriffs*" contain this reference: "The citizens kept watch and ward, riding by night through the City with horse and arms, though among them a countless multitude of persons obtruded themselves, and some evil-minded persons, under pretext of searching for aliens, broke open many houses, and carried off such goods as were there to be found. To restrain the evil designs of these men, the watches on horseback were therefore put an end to, and watch was kept by the respective wards, each person keeping himself well armed within his own ward."

Cities, towns, and boroughs, according to their population, were bound to maintain a certain percentage of men for watch by night and for ward by day. Hence the division of London and other places into wards, of which the alderman was the magistrate.

In the reign of Edward III., parish constables were directed to be appointed at the courts leet of the franchise or hundred; and from the year 1332 they were empowered to arrest persons suspected of manslaughter, felonies, and robberies, and to deliver them to the sheriff, to be kept in prison until the coming of the justices. In 1361, they were ordered "to inquire after wanderers, to arrest and imprison suspicious persons, and to oblige persons of evil fame to give security for good behaviour, so that the people may not be troubled by rioters, nor the peace blemished, nor merchants and others travelling on the highways be disturbed or put in peril by such offences."

Until our own day the general law provided that every township should have its constable, and it was the duty of every man to serve his turn in that office for nothing, lawful fees excepted. Where the old local courts were extinct, the constable was appointed by the justices. The man chosen might find a substitute. In the present reign, Acts of Parliament were passed directing the justices to obtain from their officers a list of those men within the parish qualified and liable to serve as constables. If not specially exempted, every able-bodied man between the ages of twenty-five and fifty-five years, rated to the poor, or a tenant to the value of £4 per annum, must be included in this list, from which the justices make their selection.

The police constable may not simply feel proud of *his high and ancient office—he enjoys powers which no private person can exercise.* These prerogatives are still important, and, as Maitland remarks, “it is mainly because he is a constable—an officer known to the law—that he whom we call a policeman differs from other men.”

According to Dr. Johnson, the word “police” is a French one, meaning “the regulation and government of a state or country so far as regards its inhabitants.” It was not until the last century that the word “police” became generally known, and its use as an equivalent for a body of constables is altogether modern. Sir Charles Warren dates the introduction of the term “police” from 1787, when paid constables were first appointed in Ireland.

For more than five hundred years, the Statute of Winchester, altered and amended from time to time, remained in force, and under it the Dogberries lived and flourished. These worthies, whose history we shall presently relate, might have inspired the sentiment of Tennyson's brook—

“Men may come and men may go,  
But we go on for ever.”

During the reign of Henry VIII., the City of London watch had become a large and well-constituted body, and when the king entered the City in state he was received by the citizens with great pomp and pageantry, and the watch were paraded before him. The procession, which was a kind of glorified Lord Mayor's Show, was repeated every Midsum-

mer's night, and morris-dancers, giants, lancers, carbineers, archers, pikemen, halberdiers, bellmen, and musicians, in all about two thousand men, were engaged in it. This nocturnal display of the "marching watch," as it was termed, was illuminated by nearly a thousand iron pans, carried aloft on poles, containing burning pitch. These were called cressets, and two men were appointed to each—one to carry it, and "another to bear a bag with light and to serve it."

There is a cresset still preserved in the armoury of the Tower of London. It is an open pan, hanging upon swivels, fastened to a forked staff. In the centre of the pan is a spike, around which was coiled a rope, soaked in pitch, resin, etc., which sputtered and burned luridly as the watchman carried it aloft.

The annual pageant on Midsummer's night was discontinued by desire of the king in 1539, on account of the expense to the State, which defrayed the cost of two hundred of the cressets, at 2*s.* 4*d.* a piece. In 1548, during the mayoralty of Sir Thomas Gresham, it was again set on foot; and twenty-two years later, in 1570, in the reign of Elizabeth, this marching watch and its pompous procession were entirely remodelled, and a standing watch kept. There was an unsuccessful attempt to procure the renewal of the festivals on the ground that "they set artificers to work, old soldiers and poor men, for which the rich paid."

When we come to speak of the class of men who performed the duties of watch and ward, we shall have to show how the stalwart constable in harness gradually became transformed into "a venerable personage bearing a halberd and lanthorn," and how, in turn, this "walking woolpack with a coal-scuttle on his head,"

or "this bundle of rags going to a paper-mill," by slow stages was replaced by the semi-military policemen of modern days. But before doing so, some idea should be given of the crime in England, at all events, with which the ancient watchmen had to contend.

Roger Hovenden said it was a common practice in the reign of Henry I. for a hundred or more, in company, young and old, to make nightly invasions upon the houses of the wealthy, with intent to rob them; and if they found any man stirring who was not of their crew, they would murder him, and no man would adventure to walk the streets at night. John Senex, "a citizen of much credit," was actually taken with other thieves, and he vainly offered five hundred pounds in silver for his life, but he was hanged on the gallows with salutary effect.

As time went on, however, matters did not improve, at all events in London, where, in the days of Edward III., bands of marauders went through the City by day and night with swords and bucklers, beating and ill-using people. Twice the king by royal letters patent commanded the mayor and sheriffs to discover these ruffians, who were "to be laid in prison without delay." It was in consequence of these disturbances of the peace that Henry III. had, a century earlier, ordered the watch to be kept; and, further, as we have said, he required the chief of the city or borough to compensate any citizen who might have suffered loss by thief or robber. Considerable ill-feeling was occasioned by this mandate.

Bluff King Harry had the same trouble to contend with, and it is on record that he caused to be hanged "of great thieves and of petty thieves threescore and

twelve thousand." For a while he seemed to have greatly terrified the rest; but after his death their number again increased. Still most historians agree that, on the whole, crime was less rampant in the days of Elizabeth, when there was special legislation about watching, than of Anne and of the first of the Georges. During the troublesome days of Charles I., an armed watch, consisting of 1,097 men, was maintained at night in the City of London. Charles II., whose nocturnal excursions in the purlieus of London probably convinced him how necessary a systematic lighting of the streets had become, arranged with a contractor to affix before every tenth door a lamp, which to an extent put a check upon the practices of thieves and ruffians, and of the horse-play of dissolute young men, who for many generations had swaggered about the streets, breaking windows, upsetting sedan-chairs, and beating quiet men. These were the Muns and the Tityre Tus bands, who were succeeded by the Hectors, the Nickers, the Hawkubites, and the Mohocks. The latter, under the frenzy of drunkenness, joined in a general sally upon inoffensive persons, whom they knocked down, stabbed, cut, or carbonadoed.

As for the regular thieves, Fleetwood, who was recorder in 1585, has described an academy which then existed near to Billingsgate, where young boys were taught to cut purses, much after the manner narrated by Dickens in "*Oliver Twist*." A pocket, he says, had in it certain counters, and was hung about with hawk's bells, and a lad who could abstract one of these counters without noise was allowed to be a public "foyster"—that is, a pickpocket; whilst the novice who



could take a piece of silver out of a purse was adjudged a "judicial nipper"—in other words, a pick-purse or cut-purse.

There were bold robbers in the days of the Commonwealth, for was it not Mull'd Sack, the handsome chimney-sweep, who distinguished himself by robbing Lady Fairfax, Oliver Cromwell, and Charles II.? Long years before this, the trick of ring-dropping was known; and quite a century before the Fire of London, lodging-houses were known to be chiefly resorted to by thieves, who gave them nicknames. Strange were the tricks which were played upon the public in 1566 and subsequently. At that time "a cursitor" was the name by which a vagabond was known; "a ruffler" was a sturdy beggar; "an upright man," a sort of chief or ruler of the begging community; "a prigger of prances" was the slang for a horse-stealer; "an Abraham man," a fellow who pretended to be insane; whilst he who imitated epilepsy was called "a counter-feit crank."

Then there were bogus shipwrecked sailors, otherwise "whip-jacks," and "dummerers," who feigned an inability to speak. An early edition of the confidence trick was even practised. It was known as "coney-catching"—the coney being the flat for whom the sharpers or "cozeners" were on the look-out. The actors in the little farce played different rôles, but, according to one version, the dupe was first "spotted" by a Jeremy Diddler personage, or "taker up," who introduced him to a confederate, or "verser," whose task was to induce the simpleton to play for money. Then came a bully, or "rutter," who picked a quarrel, and in the row thus produced, a fourth member of the

gang, called the "barnard," stole away with the stakes.

An amusing anecdote is told of the way in which a citizen outwitted a cut-purse who had stolen his cash. Promptly he drew his sword and slashed off the fellow's ear: "I will offer you fair," said he. "Give me my purse again, and here's your ear; take it and begone."

Compared with preceding centuries, notwithstanding the presumptive advance in civilization, the social pictures of the eighteenth are by no means of a commendable character. By an Act of Parliament passed in 1717, persons convicted of receiving or of buying goods knowing them to have been stolen, were liable to be sentenced to fourteen years' transportation. This Act was directly aimed at the famous Jonathan Wild, who had carried on a clandestine conspiracy with thieves, burglars, and highwaymen, whose operations he prompted and directed. There was a clause which especially hit at Wild's tactics, and it was made a felony for any person to help the losers of stolen goods to recover their property on payment of a reward, without apprehending the thief, and causing him to be brought to trial.

Wild's plan was to "put up" a burglary, act as receiver, open negotiations with the victim, restore the goods for a consideration, and divide the money with his associates, without betraying them to the law. Wild, by his audacity and ingenuity, contrived for many years to evade the new law, but he was ultimately convicted upon the clause above mentioned, and he was executed at Tyburn in 1725, which appears to have broken up his system effectually.

Wild professed to be an indefatigable thief-catcher,

and at his trial he produced a printed document for the inspection of the jury. It was entitled "A list of persons discovered, apprehended, and convicted of several robberies on the highway; also for burglary and housebreaking, and also for returning from transportation, by Jonathan Wild." It contained the names of thirty-five robbers, twenty-two housebreakers, and ten returned convicts, whom he had been instrumental in getting hanged.

Whilst he was occupying the condemned cell at Newgate, Wild directed his attentions to the preparation of a work on thief-catching, and it also treated on the desirability of establishing an asylum for retired and, it may be supposed, repentant thieves.

At the period of which we are writing, a reward of £40 was part of a system set up by various Acts of Parliament, sanctioning money payments to persons who procured the conviction of highway robbers, coiners, and other such offenders. In 1755, a conspiracy was exposed which had existed for many years, during which innocent people had been accused of crime by informers for the sake of reward. Four of these miscreants, Berry, Salmon, McDaniel, and Gahagan, were indicted for this offence; but they were acquitted, as it did not come within the law. However, they were indicted afresh, and were sentenced to seven years' imprisonment, and to be placed twice in the pillory. McDaniel and Berry were assailed with missiles, and the others were similarly treated, Gahagan being killed outright by the infuriated mob, who laid hands upon them at the first chance. Their *modus operandi* was for one of the gang to induce two persons to join him in robbing an accomplice, who,

taking care that his confederate should escape, forthwith apprehended the two dupes, and having his evidence supported by another of his associates, he trumped up the charge and experienced no difficulty in convicting the two dupes, and in securing the reward. Occasionally they resorted to getting up a story of highway robbery or burglary which had never taken place. When these unscrupulous men received their money it was divided at an entertainment called a "blood-feast."

At the time of the first visit to the City of George II. and his queen, soon after their accession to the throne, the cities of London and Westminster had been pestered for a considerable time with a number of street robbers; and so audacious had they become, that they formed a scheme for robbing the queen in St. Paul's Churchyard, as she came privately from the supper in the City to St. James's. This scheme was, however, frustrated by the thieves being busily employed in robbing Sir Gilbert Heathcote, an alderman of London, as he was returning in his carriage from the House of Commons.

A formal representation was made to the king by the Lord Mayor and the Aldermen of London, in 1744, to the effect that divers conspiracies of great numbers of evil-disposed persons, armed with bludgeons, pistols, and cutlasses, and other dangerous weapons, infested not only the private lanes and passages, but likewise the public streets, committing the most daring outrages upon people, terrifying, robbing, and wounding them, even in open daylight, and at such hours heretofore deemed hours of security.

This was not the only complaint of the kind pro-

ceeding from the same quarter. Nearly forty years later, in 1780, a great meeting was held at the Guild-hall, and it was then resolved to request the officers of the Royal Volunteer Companies to give two months' instruction in the use of arms to the citizens desirous of assisting the civil magistrates in the preservation of the peace. We find in the same year that the united parishes of St. Andrew's, Holborn, and St. George the Martyr decided upon arming a sufficient number of the principal inhabitants to act in support of the civil power, and a plan of defence was framed which contained the germs of the police system thereafter to be established. It is curious to note that these civilian police were each required to have a drill jacket, musket, bayonet, cross-belt, and cartouche box. The uniform consisted of a plain *blue* light frock, with gilt buttons, lined with white, and white waistcoat and breeches. Each man wore a black stock, black silk garters, and gaiters of black cloth, and altogether he was rather a dandy policeman.

No doubt the good people of London had reason for their apprehension, as there had been no less than four riots in fifteen years.

Particularly in the years 1744-45, numbers of women, as well as men, were rolling day after day about the streets drunk in consequence of the number of gin-shops, and then an Act was passed that no person should be entitled to a spirit license without he could produce an ale license, the object of this stipulation being to extinguish gin-shops altogether; but how slow was the process may be seen from the fact that, just upon fifty years later, in the Tower Hamlets alone there were eleven hundred public-houses

licensed, and Sir Matthew Conant had difficulty in reducing that total by eighty-seven in two years.

As for the pastimes of the people, there was the shameful practice of bull-hanking, the animal being tied to a stake and baited with dogs. Throwing at cocks on Shrove Tuesday with sticks and stones was another favourite amusement; and pigeons were also done to death.

Between the years 1700–1800, cock-fighting was highly popular, and the writer of "*A Journey through England*," in 1724, giving an account of the sport (?), described a cock-pit as a model of the amphitheatre of the ancients. The cocks fought in the arena, and round the circle sat the spectators in several rows. It was wonderful to see the courage of the little creatures, which always continued fighting till one of them dropped and died on the spot. "I saw several matches," said the author, "and never saw a cock run away. However, I must own it to be a remnant of the barbarous customs of this island, and too cruel for my entertainment." The cocks wore spurs, or "gafflets," and there was a continued clamour of betting, such cries as "6 to 4," "5 to 1," and "£10 to a crown" being heard above the din; and it struck the spectator that "the backers displayed as much earnestness in putting their money on their favourite, as if it were a party contest in which they were taking part."

Certain noted places of resort for women of bad character, idle apprentices, and profligate young men existed in the notorious Apollo Gardens, the Dog and Duck, and Temple of Flora.

Many streets were in the most unsafe condition, as may be seen from the reminiscences of two famous

Bow Street runners who gave evidence before the Royal Commission of 1812 upon the state of the police—Townsend and Sayer. The latter declared that in 1780 an officer could not walk Duck Lane, Gravel Lane, and Cock Lane without a party of five or six men along with him, or he would have been cut to pieces.

A graphic sketch of things as they were in 1780 was written for Jonas Hanway by a member of what was known as the London Military Association, who related his experiences of two nights' exploration in a quarter of London which has happily disappeared. It was in Field Lane that the Artful Dodger was instructed by Fagin, the Jew.

"We were twice on duty," narrated the special constable, "and we were attended by peace officers, particularly two who had been long employed in the art and mystery of thief-taking. One of our detachments visited Chick Lane, Field Lane, and Black Boy Alley, and some other such places. From the first we escorted several persons to prison. These places constitute a kind of separate town or district, calculated for the reception of the most dangerous enemies of society, in which, when pursued for the commission of crimes, they can easily conceal themselves. The houses are divided, from top to bottom, into many compartments, with doors of communication to each, and also with the adjacent houses, some having two, others three, others four, doors opening into different alleys. To such a height is our neglect of police arrived, the owners of these houses make no secret of their being kept for the entertainment of thieves. One woman, a rosy veteran, being questioned on this

head, answered, 'Where are they to go, if we don't admit them?' Thus, they support in principle the propriety of maintaining the republic of thieves. In many rooms I saw six, seven, eight, or ten men in bed without shirts—all pictures of misery. Into one loft we crept through a trap-door, our bayonets and pistols in our hands.

"At a certain house near East Smithfield, reputed to be employed chiefly for the reception of highwaymen and thieves, it was with difficulty we obtained admittance. At the end of a little passage, upstairs, I observed a small deal door: there we demanded admittance, but we were answered in a rough tone, 'I am a half-pay officer, and will not admit you.' We explained our business and authority, promising to treat him civilly. At length we were admitted into a small room, in great disorder. From this apartment a door opened into a room which appeared to be fifty feet long, and proportionately broad. Here were all kinds of implements of artisans—saws, screws, various kinds of instruments for cutting; a quantity of spirits of nitre, a furnace, crucibles, burned bones, locks, hinges, a great number of books, chests of drawers—all in the wildest confusion.

"The peace officers and keepers of this house appeared to be well acquainted with each other, and on terms which rather astonished us, who were in search of ambiguous as well as of bad characters. Our suspicion increased the more as these persons insisted there could be no motive for going into certain houses, although from some of them we brought away the most suspected persons, while the peace officers conducted us into places where there appeared to be



less ground of suspicion, and in some places they would not go upstairs. We were inclined to think that we were often in the haunts of highwaymen as well as of infantry thieves, for in some places we found the bones of horses."

Highwaymen of the Jack Sheppard type were a terrible curse in those days. Old Townsend indicated in his evidence that these gentry frequented Hounslow Heath, Wimbledon Common, Finchley Common, and the Romford Road, and he grew quite accustomed to people coming to his desk at Bow Street in the morning and giving particulars of the outrages they had suffered the previous night. An advertisement of the Marylebone Gardens in 1764 states that, "besides the usual Patrole to protect the Company to and from the Gardens, Mr. Lowe having received information of several Robberies being committed in and about the City Road, he thinks proper to acquaint the Public that he has provided a Horse Patrole to protect the Company to and from the City and other adjacent parts. They will set out this evening (July 7th) at seven o'clock from Marylebone, along the Road to Moorgate, and protect any Company returning that way as far as the Gardens. N.B.—Over and above the Reward given by the Government for the taking of any Highwayman or footpad, Mr. Lowe will give a premium of Ten Guineas."

To Marylebone Gardens tradition, indeed, declares that the renowned Dick Turpin, the prince of highwaymen, came. A celebrated beauty of her day, the wife or sister-in-law of Dr. Fontayne, was one day "taking the air" in the Gardens, when she was saluted by Dick

Turpin, who boldly kissed her before the company and all "the quality." The lady started back, astonished and offended. "Be not alarmed, madam," said the highwayman; "you can now boast that you have been kissed by Dick Turpin. Good morning!" and the knight of the road walked off unmolested.

There is reason to fear that, notwithstanding the halo of romance which converts a highwayman into a hero, he was oftentimes a very sorry sort of creature. Whence came the great majority? Dr. Colquhoun, a great authority, writing in 1800, affirmed that a few of them were young men of some education, who, having acquired idle habits, had abandoned business, or by being bred to no profession, and having been seduced by this idleness to indulge in gambling and dissipation, at length became impoverished and unable to purchase their accustomed gratifications. In such straits they had recourse to the highway to supply their immediate wants.

Others who bade the timid traveller "Stand and deliver! Your money or your life!" were ruined tradesmen who had turned thieves; and many more were ostlers and stable-boys, out of place. There were also profligates; idle and dissolute fellows, criminals who had been acquitted, and convicts discharged from prison and the hulks—to all of whom the job of stopping a stage-coach, or waylaying a pedestrian, was congenial work. Some of these footpads frequently indulged in great barbarities and cruelty; and the crime of highway robbery was a capital offence.

Not that the capital sentence was limited to offences of that description. Sir William Blackstone computed that in 1800 there were 160 crimes punish-

able by death, and some of them for the most trivial misdeeds. The lad who cut down a hop-bine was hanged; or the man who cut down a tree in a garden or avenue was hanged; and the person who stole linen from a bleaching-ground was hanged. But the most forcible illustration of the severity of the times must be taken from the Gibbet Law of Halifax. It does not appear, however, that any person was executed after the year 1650, when John Wilkinson and Anthony Mitchell, of Sowerby, completed the list of forty-nine wretches who at various dates, commencing in 1542, had suffered the extreme penalty of the law. The felons named had stolen nine yards of cloth, valued at 9s.; a black colt, 48s.; and a grey colt, £3; but some of their predecessors had been adjudged deserving of death for the simple theft of goods appraised at thirteenpence halfpenny!

Strangely enough, as is very fully set forth in the quaint work of William Bentley, 1708, the custom peculiar to the Forest of Hardwick is defended as an ancient law, practised in this part of Great Britain before the Norman Conquest and during the time of the Saxons, and confirmed by the practices of European nations. It is also spoken of as "the Noble and more Generous way of putting Felons to Death, not hanging them by the Neck, as is done to most contemptible Animals, but by severing their heads from their Bodies with an Ax, after the Manner of their Engine, called the Scottish Maiden."

This same method of punishment appears to have been in operation at Dover, Southampton, Northampton, and in other parts of the country.

Apart from Halifax, and notwithstanding the

Reformation, the general law of the land remained very stringent. Offences which were classed as simple felonies, such as the receiving of stolen goods, stealing from furnished lodgings, setting a wood on fire, stealing children with their clothing, and stealing a shroud out of a grave, were punishable by whipping, imprisonment, the pillory, and hard labour in the houses of correction.

Whipping, by the way, has never been abolished by statute; but this was the mildest form of reproof and of example. Vagabonds used to be branded with the letter V, and idlers with an S for slave; and an Act of William and Mary directs that the iron should be applied on the most visible part of the left cheek, near the nose. Mutilation, except that of cropping of the ears, was abandoned at the end of the sixteenth century. The pillory survived until 1837; the stocks were in use as late as 1860, when John Gamble, of Stanningley, was in them for six hours for Sunday gambling. The ducking-stool for scolds was certainly employed at Leominster in 1809. All these several appliances were in active operation at the period under review; but the chief engine of the law was the gallows—"the deadly never green." Townsend, speaking of the year 1783, when Sergeant Adair was recorder, said there were forty hung at two executions, and there never was an execution when that "unfortunate gibbet was not graced by ten, twelve, to twenty, and even forty culprits."

Under the law of Edward III., the punishment for high treason was as follows:—The guilty man was drawn to the place of execution on the ground, hanged by the neck, and then cut down alive; the entrails

were taken out and burned while he was yet alive. The head was cut off, and the body divided into four parts, which were at the king's disposal. Women were at one time burned, having been previously strangled, but the law was repealed in the reign of George III.

Whilst on the question of penalties, we may recall the fact that in 1833 a child of *nine* was sentenced to be hanged for poking a stick through a pane of glass and stealing twopennyworth of paint; but he was not executed. And it will hardly be believed that as late as 1734 the custom of pressing prisoners to death when they refused to plead was practised at Newgate, the wretches being stripped, tied down, shut in dungeons, and weighted with iron, and then fed on black bread and water from a puddle until they died.

The error which our forefathers fell into was to "shut the stable door after the steed was stolen;" that is to say, they inflicted punishments of a severity ludicrously disproportionate to the character of the offences, and at the same time, until convinced of their folly, they intrusted the preservation of the peace and the suppression of crime to the feeblest machinery, which had deteriorated with the lapse of years. We refer to the Charlies; but they require a chapter to themselves.

## CHAPTER II.

## OLD LONDON CHARLIES.

"Hang out your lanterns"—The Dogberry race—Old Hobson and the Lord Mayor—Defoe's criticism—London Charlies (eighteenth century)—Anecdotes of their habits and failings—In league with thieves—Pearson's attack—"Past eleven o'clock"—An old song—Decadence of the Charlies.

"Past one o'clock and almost two,  
My masters all, good day to you."

AS we have already shown, the towns and cities of England were divided into wards for watching purposes. Stow says there belonged to each ward a bellman, who, especially in the long nights, went through the streets ringing a bell and saluting his masters and mistresses with some rhymes suitable to the festivals and the seasons of the year; at the same time, bidding them look to their lights. This latter custom is said to have originated in 1556, in the reign of Queen Mary, and to have been first practised in Cordwainer Ward of the City of London, by Alderman Draper. The duty of the bellman seems to have been the seeing that the citizens duly hung out their lanterns, and his usual cry was, "Hang out your lanterns, look to your lights." The office is thus described: "Then and there, one went all the night with a bell, and at

each lane's end gave a warning of fire and candle, and to help the poor and pray for the dead."

The bellman must not, however, be confounded with the watchman, although they were closely associated.

Shakespeare has left a finished picture of Dogberry and Verges, with the watch, in *Much Ado About Nothing*, and it would seem that they had in his day arrived at that degree of stupid ignorance which made them objects of contempt so long as they were tolerated, which, by the way, was for a good many hundred years.

"This is your charge," said Dogberry: "You shall comprehend all vagrom men; you are to bid any man stand, in the Prince's name.

"*2nd Watch.* How if he will not stand?

"*Dogberry.* Why, then, take no note of him, but let him go; and presently call the rest of the watch together, and thank God you are rid of a knave.

"*Verges.* If he will not stand when he is bidden, he is none of the Prince's subjects.

"*Dogberry.* True, and they are to meddle with none but the Prince's subjects. You shall also make no noise in the streets; for, the watch to babble and talk, is most tolerable, and not to be endured.

"*2nd Watch.* We will rather sleep than talk; we know what belongs to a watch.

"*Dogberry.* Why, you speak like an ancient and most quiet watchman; for, I cannot see how sleeping should offend: only, have a care that your bills be not stolen. Well, you are to call at all the ale-houses, and bid those that are drunk get them to bed.

"*2nd Watch.* How if they will not?

"*Dogberry.* Why, then, let them alone till they are

sober; if they make you not then the better answer, you may say they are not the men you took them for.

"*2nd Watch.* Well, sir.

"*Dogberry.* If you meet a thief, you may suspect him, by virtue of your office, to be no true man; and, for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty.

"*2nd Watch.* If we know him to be a thief, shall we not lay hands on him?

"*Dogberry.* Surely, by your office, you may; but I think they that touch pitch will be defiled: the most peaceable way for you, if you do take a thief, is to let him show himself what he is, and steal out of your company."

How biting is the sarcasm of this dialogue! but from the earliest days it has been the rule to laugh at the watch, and to play pranks upon them. Neither did the bellman escape ridicule. In the "*Pleasant Conceits of Old Hobson, the merry Londoner, 1606,*" it is related that "when the order of hanging out lantern and candle-light was first of all brought up, the bedell of the ward where Maister Hobson dwelt on a dark evening went crying up and down, 'Hang out your lanterns, hang out your lanterns,' using no other words. Maister Hobson took out an empty lantern, and according to the bedell's calling, hung it out. This action by the Lord Mayor was taken in ill part, and for the same offence Hobson was sent to the counter; but being released the next night following, the bedell, thinking to amend his calling, cried with a loud voice, 'Hang out your lanterns and candles.' Maister Hobson thereupon hung out a lantern and candle *unlighted*, and for



this he was again sent to the counter ; but the next night the bedell, being better advised, cried, ' Hang out your lantern and candle-light,' which Maister Hobson at last did, to his great commendation, which cry of lantern and candle-light is in right manner used to this day."

A print of the date of James I. shows a watchman of the period attired in a frieze gabardine, with a leather girdle. His hat with a broad brim resembles an American planter's. He is a venerable-looking personage, and is furnished with a halberd and a horn lantern.

In 1663, it was ordered that the watch, with a constable and beadle, should watch from nine at night till seven in the morning from Michaelmas to April 1st, and from Lady Day to Michaelmas from ten in the evening till five in the morning. The inhabitants watched in rotation. Every constable failing in his duty was fined £5. Every person not watching after notice forfeited £1. "The watch," says Stow, "is a good means to keep the City, if it were performed according to law, but there be great neglects. Some of the watchmen leave their stands, and go to ale-houses, or light people home, so that many times there are not more than five or six, instead of sixteen ; so that if fire or other accident happen in the night, little or no help can be expected. At present the beadle provides the roll at his discretion, and there only attend thirty at Bishopsgate, where there should be eighty." Their pay was usually sixpence per night. From this time the guardians of the peace were called "Charlies," after the name of the reigning monarch.

Watchmen continued to carry a halberd instead of

a staff so late as the year 1706, as appears from an order of the Common Council of the City of London of that year, which directs that a sufficient watch should be kept, numbering men of strong and able bodies, to be provided with candles, lanterns, and "sufficiently armed with halberds."

The dress of the watchmen was altered from time to time, and gradually became ridiculous. Defoe says that in 1714 the streets of the City were extremely well guarded by men who carried no other arms than great staves, which had replaced the bills of which Shakespeare speaks. These guardians of the night were generally so civil as to lead a well-dressed stranger to his lodgings by the lantern. They appear to have been very tender towards gentlemen drunkards, who were allowed to sleep off the fumes of wine in the watch-boxes, whereas the vagrant wanderer was hauled off to prison.

Perhaps the most damning attack upon them was made by John Pearson, the author of a scarce tract entitled, "*The London Charleys of the Eighteenth Century, or half-past twelve o'clock and a very cloudy sort of morning.*" There is a copy of this work in the City of London Library at the Guildhall. The author, who in ironical vein wrote in 1827, no doubt contributed to the downfall of these primitive police, two years later.

In another and intermediate chapter we shall have to treat of the auxiliaries which were in existence subsequently to 1792 and prior to 1829: for the present we glide from the latter part of the eighteenth century to the first quarter of the nineteenth, limiting our observations, however, to the watchmen, or Charlies.

Pearson thus summarized their characteristics :—

“Wanted, a hundred thousand men for London watchmen. None need apply for this lucrative situation without being the age of sixty, seventy, eighty, or ninety years ; blind with one eye, and seeing very little with the other ; crippled with one or both legs ; deaf as a post ; with an asthmatical cough, that tears them to pieces ; whose speed will keep pace with a snail, and the strength of whose arm would not be able to arrest an old washerwoman of fourscore returned from a hard day’s fag at the wash-tub ; whose constitution is worn out in hard service, either in the army or navy, some unhealthy business, or from the effects of a gay and profligate life ; and such that will neither hear nor see what belongs to their duty, or what does not, unless well palmed or garnished for the same.”

This indictment may sound severe, but, as Mr. Colquhoun pointed out, the encouragement was so small—£13 to £26 annual salary—that few candidates applied who were really fit for the post. There was no alternative but to accept aged and superannuated men, and very often, from motives of humanity, or with a view to saving the rates, old inhabitants were nominated as constables, and being without any general superintendence, they were subject to innumerable temptations to dishonesty and connivance with burglars, receivers, and others wishing to escape the law. In 1800, there were supposed to be in the twenty-five wards of the City of London 803 watchmen and beadies ; in Westminster, 302 ; in Holborn, 377 ; in Finsbury, 135 ; in the Tower Hamlets, 268 ; at

the Tower of London, 14 ; in Kensington, 66 ; and in Southwark, 79 ; making a total of 2,044. From evidence submitted to Parliament in 1812, Sir N. Conant estimated that the proportion of watchmen in the metropolis was one to about seventy to eighty houses, and he was "generally an old man, dozing in his watch-box in the interval between crying the hours and when he is moving. A man cannot walk for ten hours together. A thief will watch him at one corner of the street while the intended depredation is perpetrated round the corner, and the lantern he carries shows where he is at a great distance."

At this period (1812), the watch-house in St. Paul's Churchyard had four strong rooms and a bedroom, and the watchmen were appointed by a committee of the parish. Sometimes eight or ten charges were taken in one night, and occasionally there would not be one for a month.

Despite the way in which they laughed at them, the public clung affectionately to their Charlies. They grinned at their failings. "A friend of mine," says Erskine, "was suffering from continual wakefulness, and various methods were taken to send him to sleep, but in vain. At last his physicians resorted to an experiment which succeeded perfectly. They dressed him in a watchman's coat, put a lantern in his hand, and placed him in a sentry-box, and in ten minutes he was asleep."

Pearson thus indexed their shortcomings. "They shall not presume," he said, "to apprehend street robbers or housebreakers if they shall see them in the very act, if it shall exceed two and three-quarter

inches from their beats ; nor shall they spring their rattles, nor render any assistance, nor go in pursuit of any thief or thieves until at least six hours after the robbery has been committed, and when they do so, it shall be to show themselves in pursuit on the wrong scent, asserting that the thieves have gone to the south, when at the same time they are gone to the north, and entirely out of the reach of justice, for which they shall be well rewarded by the thieves, who, it is said, keep funds for that purpose.

“ Further, when called upon to give evidence in a court of justice against notorious offenders, they shall make oath that they never knew the prisoner at the bar before in their lives, nor ever heard of him either directly or indirectly, although they had been seen in his company fifty times, and fifty to that : had been eating and drinking with him only twelve hours before the robbery was committed, and afterwards received part of the plunder as a reward for not splitting, and taking the innocent Strawmarket or Custom House oath.”

Our author has something very severe to say about the noise the watchmen made in crying the hour, and he pictures the absurdity of their appearance : “ And by way of making them more conspicuous, he [each watchman] shall be supplied with a magnificent great-coat, white as the driven snow, wide enough, long enough, strong enough, thick enough, broad enough, heavy enough, and all the rest of the enoughts for the tilt of an eight-horse broad-wheeled waggon, which will wonderfully accelerate his speed when in pursuit of a nimble-footed thief, whom he will undoubtedly capture with the garment so

admirably well calculated to sweat horse-jockeys at Newmarket, Epsom, or Ascot Heath race-courses."

The Charlies survived the introduction of gas into London, but they still waddled about with their lanterns, which they hung up in their boxes whilst dozing. The old watchman was also prone to wrapping up his ears carefully with rags, stockings, and dirty, greasy night-caps. During the daytime he was allowed to drag trucks and to carry heavy burdens, so that he came to his night duty thoroughly worn out. He was poorly paid and poorly fed; he was the laughing-stock of every one; and, as a contemporary writer remarked, "the London watch is, to all intents and purposes, a complete humbug of the first water."

Yet it must be said to the credit of one Lord Mayor, that he turned out as early as four a.m. in the month of December for four mornings, when he visited all the watch-houses where the watchmen were mustered. His lordship inspected the men, and he discharged those who were unfit for further service.

It was a common sport with the young bloods of the town to overturn the watch-box, in which there was always a candle alight; and once when this happened in Goldsmith Street, Cheapside, about ten o'clock at night, the inmate, scarcely awake, bawled from the gutter, "Past eleven o'clock." Usually, to quote Pearson, "about midnight, when things began to be quiet, they retired to their boxes and took a comfortable snooze of about three and a half hours. Though a house should be on fire on one side of the box and another robbed on the other, they would see no more of either transaction than the Emperor of

China or the Pope of Rome; yet the moment they woke and found the house enveloped in flame, the street full of engines, and the thieves safe off with their booty, they would hobble out of their box and call the hour; and, should any wag laugh at them for so doing, take him into custody, lock him up all night with felons, have him up before his worship next morning, and swear he obstructed him in the execution of his duty, was very impertinent and obstreperous, and would not move on, so help me Gog and Magog."

A charming writer, now dead, whose pen was confined to the chronicles of the great city, gives the text of an old street song, which shows what used to be thought of the watchmen's services:—

"A watchman I am, and I knows all the rounds—  
 The housekeepers, the strays, and the lodgers;  
 I knows when young cits are a-breaking the bounds,  
 To join with night-walkers and codgers.  
     Down alleys I drives,  
     Where men and their wives  
     Are drinking and cursing,  
     While thieves are cut-pursing;  
     While loudly I bawls,  
     At the stroke of St. Paul's,  
 'Past one o'clock and a cloudy morning.'

As I pass through the Row, a rope ladder I spies,  
 And Miss Forward expecting her lover;  
 If they tips me a crown, I shut fast my eyes,  
 And lets them elope all in clover.  
     If the burglar breaks in,  
     To take gold is no sin,  
     And Bill Pickpurse may pass,  
     If he gives us a glass—  
     As I drinks and I bawls,  
     At the stroke of St. Paul's,  
 'Past two o'clock and a cloudy morning!'"

Summing up the necessary reforms, the following were the chief points:—There should be no more pur-

chasing of bail for the night ; but every person should be taken before the magistrate. The watchman should not take fees, smoke on duty, give light to passengers, nor sup in public-houses ; his ears should not be covered ; and he ought not to go off his beat until relieved by the day police.

In Leigh's "New Picture of London" (1823), which was illustrated by coloured prints and Rowlandson's characteristic sketches, there is a grave charge brought against the watchmen. That they were infirm, sleepy fellows, wholly indifferent to their duties, is indicated by the humour of the drawing, which depicts an old Charley loitering along, leaning on his staff, his lantern in hand, and his watch-box left wide open, whilst, wholly unperceived, a thief is giving a housebreaker a lift to the top of a wall, by which he may enter the window of an adjacent house. But the allegation went further than this. The writer asserted that the watchmen not only levied contributions on unfortunate women to permit them to walk the streets, but received bribes to dismiss complaints that had been brought against violators of the peace. They had been convicted, further, of interrupting and assaulting passengers who were quietly passing along the streets, with a view to promoting quarrels. When this succeeded, the injured party was captured by these preservers of the peace, carried to the watch-house, and charged with rioting or possibly the assault, should the unlucky pedestrian have been provoked to inflict a blow. Rather than be condemned to a night's lodging in a dirty watch-house, and afterwards appear at the police office, at the charge of a crowd of watchmen,



a compromise was injudiciously offered and seldom refused.

The following warning was added:—"It is the duty of the public to pursue a directly different conduct—to await the event of the morning, and to state the whole case to the magistrates. They will always afford justice, and grant protection against the license of the watchmen"—that is to say, they endeavoured to do so.

Stupid indiscretions were credited to the watchmen, and one of them named Sands, who was stationed in the Savoy, was suspended by Sir Richard Birnie, chief magistrate at Bow Street in 1821, for having taken an officiating clergyman into custody for talking to a person in the street and refusing to "move on" when ordered to do so. The reverend gentleman was obliged to leave his watch and seals as security for his appearance at the police court the next day.

Very absurdly, too, these guardians of the peace declined to enter the limits of another parish in pursuit of a thief. What was worse, the magistracy had actually little power over these parish officials, and their interference was always resented. Offences were committed in the streets close by a watch-box, and the watchman might as usual be fast asleep, or on idle scruples would give no assistance, and in the ordinary way the magistrates would have no power of punishing him.

"The last of the old watchmen, as I well remember," says an old writer, "used to snore in a box opposite 'the original White Conduit.' After the establishment of the new police, being allowed to retain his great-coat by the parish, and receiving divers eleemosynary sixpences weekly, he continued his nightly warnings for several years."

## CHAPTER III.

## UNDER THE MAGISTRACY.

Police Bill of 1792—"Basket justices"—Establishment of police courts in London—Duties of magistrates and their officers—Imperfections of the system—Local police—City of London force—Increase of receivers of stolen property—Spitalfields in 1822—Underground thieves' dens—Special constables—A "bear-bait"—No detective machinery—Scale of rewards—"He does not weigh forty pounds yet"—Tyburn tickets.

**I**T was not the absurdity and the inefficiency of the Charlies which led to the Police Bill of 1792—a great step forward in the direction of reform. For nearly forty years afterwards the public were content to put up with the ancient watchman, although some energetic measures were instituted in certain localities.

What the citizens of the metropolis expected of the new system of police was the suppression of robberies and burglaries thereby, crimes which were dreaded by people generally; but, as a matter of fact, the statute did not contain a single regulation applicable to the prevention of such offences, except that which related to the apprehension of suspected characters. As was observed at the time, "An establishment had been created without the means of defraying the expense of detecting criminals."

Until 1792, at Bow Street, an office which dates

from 1770, and at Worship Street, dating from 1778, the magistrates were paid by fees. These were obtained in a manner so disgraceful that the magistrates were given the name of "trading justices," or "basket justices," in allusion to the kind of bribes—baskets of game—they accepted. Old Townsend said, "The plan used to be to issue warrants, and to take up all the poor devils in the streets; and then there was the bailing of them, 2s. 4d. each, which the magistrates had. In taking up 100 girls they would make, at 2s. 4d., £11 13s. 4d. They sent none of them to gaol, for the bailing of them was so much better." No wonder that under such rule thieves and blacklegs thrived!

By the Police Bill of 1792, regular and properly constituted tribunals for the dispensation of justice were set on foot; and, in addition to the twenty-six magistrates sitting at the Mansion House and at the Guildhall, within the jurisdiction of the City, twenty-six other magistrates were appointed for the remainder of the metropolis, including the river police, having courts assigned to them in Westminster, Middlesex, and Surrey. There were eight courts in all, viz. Bow Street, Queen Square, Marlborough Street, Hatton Garden, Worship Street, Whitechapel, Shadwell, and Southwark, each of which cost £2000 per annum. A ninth office was added in 1800. No central organization was provided to bind the system together, except that the police were under the supervision of the Home Secretary and a royal commissioner.

The duties of the magistrates were very varied, for they had to determine in a summary way cases relating to customs, excise, game laws, hawkers and

pedlars, pawnbrokers, friendly societies, highways, hackney coaches, carts, and carriages, Quakers and others refusing to pay tithes, trade disputes, disorderly houses, nuisances under different Acts of Parliament, acts of vagrancy, etc. They had also to undertake the licensing of public-houses, the charging and instructing of parochial constables and headboroughs from year to year with regard to their duty, the issuing of warrants, the making of orders for parish officers, beadles, and constables, the attesting of recruits, and the visiting of workhouses and prisons, besides having to attend the general and quarter sessions, and to discharge many other duties as well. Criminal matters which came under their notice included cases of treason, murder, coining and uttering base money, arson, manslaughter, forgery, burglary, larceny, sedition, felonious conspiracies, plots, riots, assaults, and misdemeanours.

The office of the magistrates was therefore no sinecure. There were many blemishes in the newly devised police system. It was inadequate, for it provided a staff of six officers only to each office. At the same time there were imperfections of the criminal code. There was no central control; there were no magistrates in towns that were unfurnished with funds; and there was no public prosecutor. Many deficiencies existed in the hulks system; there was no satisfactory way of disposing of convicts; a national penitentiary was needed; and executions were not conducted solemnly.

Crime was prevalent. It could be traced to the ale-houses, the bad education of apprentices; to servants out of place; to receivers, pawnbrokers, low

gaming-houses, smuggling, and prisons; and also to the fraudulent manner in which pardons were obtained.

True it was that in the city of Westminster since 1762, as well as in Southwark and Hackney, there grew up a local police, which were more or less the outcome of the improved lighting and paving systems that were adopted.

As it was, the Middlesex Justices Act of 1792 was only an imitation of an Act passed by the Irish Parliament in 1786, by which paid constables were appointed in Dublin. From time to time the House of Commons ordered select committees to inquire into the working of the police, but without immediate result. In 1798, of 1,040 officers (exclusive of 32 in the City of London and 68 patrols at Bow Street), only 89 were stipendiary officers, pledged to devote the whole of their time to the public service. The City of London was best off with 319, and in this division of the metropolis criminals were well kept in check, at all events. The 1,040 parochial constables and headboroughs were under five separate jurisdictions. In addition there were 2,044 beadles, watchmen, and patrols, under the direction of 70 different trusts.

One may judge of the confusion which existed, and how badly were the duties discharged. Yet at this time London had 8,000 streets, with 160,000 houses, and a population of 1,250,000.

The whole expense of police in the United Kingdom in 1800 was £216,000.

In London, it was computed that there were 3,000 receivers, whose number had increased very much between the years 1780-1800. These gentry were

in league with the watchmen. George Mainwaring, in 1822, wrote—

“The frequent outrages and depredations which have recently been committed in the metropolis, and the alarm and dissatisfaction which have been thereby caused will, I hope, justify an attempt to call attention to the moral and political evils of the present police system, and induce the Government and the legislature to make it the object of their early and most serious consideration.”

Mainwaring then went on to relate that in Spital-fields there was a community of thieves and of the most profligate characters, of all ages and descriptions, who, in the face of day, dared with impunity the approaches of any force that the police could collect against them. There was also in the parish a point of nightly concentration where these persons resorted, and where, under the pretence of a bear-bait, they concerted their manifold operations, and from which they departed in pursuit of them; which spot, too, from the exhibition of ferocious sport, attracted numbers of idle and thoughtless spectators, many of whom, doubtless, soon became the victims of curiosity and of subsequent corruption. This place was underground, peculiarly suited to resist all hostile approaches from the police; and the numbers assembled were generally so great as to make it impossible to invade them with the ordinary police force, but at the risk of probable destruction. These nuisances and great enormities had existed for many years; representation after representation had been made to the magistrates; they had the will but not the power to remove them. At last the evil rose to such a height, and made residence

in and passage through the district so alarming, that the inhabitants themselves tried the effect of an internal police, to enlist themselves in the public service, and to add their strength to the limited force of the regular establishment.

It is rather a discouraging reflection to recall that in the year 1888, when Spitalfields was the scene of a series of brutal murders, and the police failed to detect the assassin, who not only killed but mutilated his victims, the inhabitants formed themselves into "vigilance associations," and undertook nightly the patrol of the streets. The lapse of some sixty or seventy years is scarcely noticeable as we proceed with the story, which was penned in 1822.

"From the activity and zeal and spirit of some of the principal inhabitants of the parish, 108 special constables were sworn in and set to work in earnest, taking all the duty of the regularly established patrols. When this force was duly organized and effectually set in motion, it was resolved to attack the main holds of these formidable gangs. This celebrated 'bear-bait' was accordingly visited under a privy search-warrant by the united forces of the regular and parochial police; a scene took place something like the memorable Cato Street attack. The senior officer at Worship Street and a few others effected their entrance whilst the bear-bait, with all its clamour, was going on. That aged and valuable officer, without arms, told the assemblage of his errand; symptoms of resistance followed, but he informed them that it was in vain, that one hundred constables surrounded the premises, and that they could not escape. An attempt was then made to extinguish the lights, but the officer, taking a

dark lantern from his pocket, turned the light upon them, and told them there was light enough in their pockets to show them all. That, with an unsuccessful effort on the part of some to break through, closed the scene. The officer then very carefully apprised them that his object was to apprehend only the characters named in his warrant, and the rest might peaceably depart. He then desired them to file off slowly and gradually, and the officers selected the more notorious, who were carried to the office; the bearward was committed to the House of Correction as a rogue and vagabond; the known thieves were holden to bail; the bear-bait ceased, and the place was shut up."

One great fault, according to Dr. Colquhoun, of the police system introduced in 1792, was its want of machinery for the detection of crime, or, according to his argument, the absence of a fund for the payment of rewards.

When robberies or burglaries were committed in or near the metropolis, where the property was of considerable value, the usual method was to apply to the City magistrates, or to justices at one of the public offices, and offer a reward. An Act of George II. inflicted a penalty, however, upon any person offering a reward for the return of goods "without any questions asked." Still the detective system sanctioned the application, when other resources failed, which they usually did, to well-known receivers of stolen goods. In other words, a thief was set to catch a thief.

There was a regular scale of rewards; £40 being payable under Acts of William and Mary and of Anne,



upon the conviction of highwaymen, counterfeiters and clippers of coin, and burglars and housebreakers, and sums of £10 under subsequent Acts (14 & 15 Geo. II.) for the conviction of sheep-stealers and utterers of false money.

It seems to have been an erroneous notion that the £40 was paid to the police officer, for the recorder allowed the prosecutor from £5 to £20, and directed the remainder to go to the police, which gave £3 to £4 each man. This estimate was made by a famous Bow Street runner, one of whose associates, with seven subordinates, was convicted, in 1816, of inducing persons to commit burglaries that the police might obtain the blood-money, which they divided between them. There was a common saying, "He does not weigh forty pounds yet," which meant that an old offender was not ripe for detection. It is remarkable that one-half the report of the select committee of 1812 on the police of the metropolis dealt with the subject of the propriety of giving rewards.

Frequent allusion is made in the report above mentioned to Tyburn tickets. These were granted to persons who had apprehended burglars or like offenders, and they were valuable to the holders, inasmuch as the tickets conferred a legal exemption from parochial duty. They were assignable, and hence marketable, and in the rich parish of St. George's, Hanover Square, they were sold for as much as twenty-five guineas apiece. Tyburn tickets Townsend called "mere bagatelles." There may be seen in an old newspaper the following advertisement :—

"To be sold, a Tyburn ticket for the parish of Ash, in the county of Surrey, apply to H. B., post

paid, No. 11, Grange Walk, Bermondsey Square. The purchaser of the above ticket will have the valuable privilege of being excused serving any parish office; and any person, although at present chosen, by purchasing before they are sworn in, will be equally excused."

## CHAPTER IV.

## BOW STREET RUNNERS AND PATROLES.

Bow Street Police Office—The two Fieldings—"Sky farmers"—Horse patrol—Keeper of the Criminal Registers—Dismounted patrols—Peel's day patrol—Vaughan's traps—Bow Street runners—Opinion of Dickens—"Robin Redbreasts"—A sketch of Townsend—A policeman worth £20,000—Anecdotes—Court detectives—A distressed bather—Sayer's assurance—Quackery of Bow Street—"Flash" houses—Correspondence between thieves—Vickery's struggle with murderers—Donakison's "Take care of your pockets"—Ruthven's capture of Thurtell—Cato Street Conspiracy—Townsend's view of the gibbet.

**B**OW STREET Police Office, the first to be established in London, has always occupied a unique position. Even now it is the court for extradition cases, and its jurisdiction comprehends the high seas; but in its earliest days—that is, in the latter half of the eighteenth century—it was renowned because of its being the head-quarters of the famous Bow Street runners. It had also honour conferred upon it by the fact that Fielding, the novelist, was one of its magistrates. His blind brother John, who was knighted in 1760, was his assistant; and, together, they presided at the court for nearly forty years, although, out of that period, owing to failing health, Henry, the accomplished author, did not sit for more than five

years. It was the latter who drew up a plan of a system of police which the Duke of Newcastle set on foot in 1753, and which Sir John Fielding also put into operation, by which he organised attacks upon gangs of thieves, highwaymen, lead-stealers—then a distinct class of criminals—pickpockets, and shoplifters. Sir John also produced a scheme for the better prevention of robberies within twenty miles of London, and he started the first horse patrol, a body of protectors which comprised eight country parties and five town parties, each under a conductor.

Sir John Fielding, whose discernment seems to have been very keen, published in 1776 a guide addressed to merchants, tradesmen, shopkeepers, innkeepers, journey-men, apprentices, and others, and also very necessary for every person coming to London either on business or pleasure. These "cautions" contained pictures of the rogues and frauds of the period, among whom were the "sky farmers," who imposed upon the charitable by a tale of feigned distress. The magistrate also exposed the humbug of begging letters, and of the appeal of the widow with a family whose husband had been lost at sea, and the time-honoured trick of ring-dropping was once more explained for the benefit of the unwary.

After the Act of 1792, Bow Street was allotted eight constables, or police officers, and three magistrates, whose legal powers were confined to the county of Middlesex and the neighbourhood of the metropolis, but they extended their endeavours towards the preservation of peace and the apprehending of felons to every part of the kingdom, when it was found desirable. Communication was maintained with the seven other

offices upon all pressing occasions, but not as to lesser offences, or by any regular system. They all acted independently of each other, except when special emergency called for general co-operation. All the police offices communicated to the Secretary of State matters of deep public interest.

This was the account which Sir Nathaniel Conant gave to the Parliamentary committee of 1812. It was this gentleman who directed the horse patrol, a system which was initiated in 1805, by Sir Richard Ford, at a cost of £8,000 per annum, and by means of which the high-roads were speedily cleared of footpads and robbers. The patrols caught very few of these pests, but their presence acted as a deterrent. A Mr. Day was the conductor. Under his supervision, mounted men, who were paid four shillings per night, rode along the main roads leading into Kent, Surrey, Middlesex, and Essex, twenty-four in number. Men and horses were stationed as far distant from town as Sidcup in Kent, Sutton in Surrey, and Loughton in Essex, and they were to be seen on Hounslow Heath, at Loughton near to Epping Forest, and at Staines on the way to Windsor. There were numerous patrols on each road.

The orders required strict obedience and punctuality. Patrols stationed on the same road were instructed to meet and communicate together, both going and returning, halting for each other at some given spot halfway on the journey. They were to be attentive to any information they might receive of any robbery having been committed or attempted, or of any suspicious persons having been seen on the road; and they were to endeavour to get a description of

these individuals, and the way they had taken. If any robbery took place, the patrol who first heard of it had to rejoin his companions, if he conveniently could, but if not, was to pursue the thieves with what other assistance he might have; and if he succeeded in catching the rogues, he had to lodge them in a secure place, and bring them by eleven o'clock the next morning to Bow Street, where the necessary witnesses were warned to appear against the prisoners.

Every patrol, when on duty, was ordered to have his pistols loaded and his sword worn outside his coat, and under no pretence was he allowed to go into a public or other house. The officers as they passed every carriage or horseman called out to the travellers in a loud, distinct voice, "Bow Street patrol."

Here is a complete list of appointments used by the horse patrol:—Headstall with chain rein, bridle complete, saddle with holsters, stirrup leathers and irons, surcingle, crupper cloak, horse cloth, straps, cloak, sabre, belt, pair of pistols, turnscrew, picker and worm, pair of handcuffs and key, book of orders, and warrant.

The dress was a blue coat with brass buttons, blue trousers, boots, scarlet waistcoat, and leathern hat. On March 31, 1888, there were still three survivors of the Bow Street patrols and of the old Thames Police upon the Metropolitan Police pension list.

Mr. Day, besides being keeper of the Criminal Registers, was also conductor of the somewhat singularly named "police horse patrol dismounted," which was organized on similar lines, but the patrols were on foot, and were armed simply with a cutlass, truncheon, and warrant. They were supposed to afford

protection to the high-roads, and were supplementary to the mounted men and to the regular watch, neither of which forces covered the districts assigned to the dismounted patrols. Lord Sidmouth, in 1821, ordered that they should not go beyond the City, which was accordingly divided into sixteen districts, each with a conductor. The following year, Mr. Peel added a day patrol, but it was only a limited affair, with twenty-four men and three inspectors.

It was very naturally asked: "To what is owing that the police officers at Bow Street are of a higher class than at the other offices?"

The reply, as tendered in evidence, was: Owing to the carefulness observed in selecting them and appointing them, and to their having a better school of instruction, and to their being brought up to regular habits. When a man solicited employment at Bow Street, he was placed first upon the patrol; and having been there for some time, his conduct meanwhile being approved, he might succeed to the appointment of conductor, or perhaps be selected for an officer. This system gave the men habits not to be acquired elsewhere, and operated as a stimulus to their exertions. There was a great deal of regularity in the management of the patrol, and, according to one of the magistrates, there had been no instance of any officer having been induced, from venal or corrupt motives, to swerve from, or betray, the confidence reposed in them; and he attributed that to their considering themselves a better description of men, and to their being more generally respected, and in many instances better paid, than at other offices.

Fielding stated that the officers at Bow Street received a guinea a week, in addition to profits derived from the service of summonses, warrants, etc. Taking the whole year through, they made on the average £80 to £85 per annum from all sources.

This was far better pay than the ordinary watchmen received, but less than the rates allowed by the Corporation of the City of London for its police. The pay of the eighty-seven patrols at Bow Street was 2s. 6d. per night, and of the three conductors, 5s. per night. The City of London remunerated their men on a more liberal scale.

Notwithstanding the feeling of self-satisfaction on the part of the magistrates and of the Bow Street officers themselves, the public at large, or some of them, believed with reason that the police of that district were employed in affairs of importance only, and in business that was lucrative. As regards the essential objects of police, such as the orderly regulation of public-houses, the apprehension of minor offenders, etc., these were less attended to at the Bow Street office than at any other.

An officer named Vaughan, for the sake of £200 blood-money, brought discredit upon Bow Street. His plan was to trap innocent people into passing bad coin to his mother, and then to pounce upon them and bring them before the court; but the scheme which procured his exposure was a put-up burglary.

Bow Street runners were a limited body of detective police whose portraits have frequently appeared in the pages of fiction. Charles Dickens studied them closely, and he prefaced his account of "a detective police



party," which was held at the office of *Household Words*, with the following verdict :—" We are not by any means devout believers in the old Bow Street police. To say the truth, we think there was a vast amount of humbug about these worthies. Apart from many of them being men of very indifferent character, and far too much in the habit of consorting with thieves and the like, they never lost a public occasion of jobbing and trading in mystery and making the most of themselves. Continually puffed, besides, by incompetent magistrates anxious to conceal their own deficiencies, and hand-in-glove with the penny-a-liners of that time, they became a sort of superstition. Although as a Preventive Police they were utterly ineffective, and as a Detective Police were very loose and uncertain in their operations, they remain with some people a superstition to the present day."

One distinctive feature of their dress was a red waistcoat, which gave them the name of "Robin Red-breasts." An observer of his time, one Richardson, described Townsend, to whom we have more than once referred. He was the principal officer, his chief assistant being Sayer, and under these two were ten subordinates. " Townsend," wrote Richardson, " said to have commenced life as a costermonger, became by effrontery and impudence, enhanced by a certain share of low cunning and low wit, the head of his profession. He derived a large income from the Christmas-boxes of the nobility, and of other parties at whose routs he was employed to detect, or to keep away, improper characters, who, he persuaded his patrons, would be present if he was not in attendance."

It used to be no uncommon thing in fashionable society to announce, in the advertisement of a rout, that "Mr. Townsend will attend." He was supposed to have an intimate knowledge of rogues and vagabonds, having been from his youth a careful student of their ways. It was his intuitiveness which led him to become a detective, and it was his shrewdness which enabled him so to contrive that when he died he was reported to have left behind him £20,000. Frequently he received five or six guineas as a fee from a nobleman for services rendered on a single occasion.

Townsend had the fortune to be one of the favourites of royalty. He was often seen in familiar conversation with George III., whose "good-humoured face was convulsed with laughter at his stories."

In those days a smart repartee was highly esteemed, and Townsend knew how to make capital in this way. In reward for his services as a police officer, a Mr. Bond had been made a magistrate. In the course of a hot dispute, Mr. Bond said to Townsend, rather hotly, that "he took too much upon himself." "No, I do not," replied Townsend, sarcastically. "The king said he had committed an error in making one police officer a magistrate, but he would not repeat the mistake by elevating another."

Once, in St. James's Park, another anecdote relates, Townsend met the Duke of Clarence. "Hallo, Townsend, where do you come from?" said he. "I am just come from your royal brother of York. He gave me one of the best glasses of wine I ever tasted." "Ah well, Townsend," said the Duke, "come and see me, and I promise to give you as good a glass of wine as my brother of York can give." "Ah!" said Towns-

end, "that's not all ; for when I admired the wine, your royal brother of York calls for his butler and desires him to bring two bottles for Mrs. Townsend, and here," added Townsend, "here they are"—pulling one out of each pocket and showing them to the Duke.

Another day the Duke recommended the officer to publish his memoirs. Townsend seemed surprised, but said he would. A short time afterwards, when he was on duty at Carlton House, the Duke asked him if he had done so. "Oh, sir," was his answer, "you have got me into a devil of a scrape ! I had begun to write my *amours*, as you desired, when Mrs. Townsend caught me in the act of writing them, and swore she'd be revenged ; for, you know, your Royal Highness, I was obliged to divulge many secrets about women for which she'll never forgive me."

When Mr. Pitt was minister in 1792, in consequence of various depredations committed at Court, and because the king and royal family were troubled by the visits of lunatics, Townsend and Sayer were appointed to the post of Court detectives ; that is to say, they had to attend at drawing-rooms, levées, and all such state occasions. At Windsor there were two officers stationed, but Townsend and Sayer always went with the Regent to Brighton, and accompanied the royal family into the country invariably.

In Fitzgerald's "*Chronicles of Bow Street Police Office*," it is narrated that soon after Townsend commenced his attendance at the levées, a nobleman had the insignia of the Order of the Garter cut from his side. The loss was instantly discovered, and notice

was given of the fact. The officer walked through the rooms, in order to detect the thief, as the company passed him. At length a person went by Townsend who, he had a strong suspicion, ought not to be at Court, but the difference of Court dress changes the appearance of a person so much that he was not certain as to the character. The officer followed the man a few paces, looking him full in the face, and then discovered him to be an old thief. He took him into custody, and on searching the prisoner the stolen property was found.

No doubt Townsend had a good memory for faces, and that the dangerous classes knew him well. Once, when he was bathing near Millbank, some thieves stole his clothes, and he had to run home as he was. His "get up" was curious. He generally wore a "light and loud" suit, knee-breeches, short gaiters, and white hat with great breadth of brim.

Two or three sharpers conceived the idea of making themselves look like Bow Street patrols, with red waistcoats and constables' staves. In this disguise they, assuming the authority of the law, marched into houses in search of contraband or stolen goods; and they, whilst being shown through the rooms of the suspected premises, quietly pocketed as much portable property as they could conveniently carry away with them.

There is one thing quite sure, that the Bow Street runners had a great opinion of their own cleverness, and they artfully persuaded people—thieves as well as their dupes—to entertain a similar view. Sayer, another runner, had been an officer at the time of the riots of 1780, and had assisted in 1798 in the arrest of a gang of thirteen desperate men, who had com-

mitted a great number of robberies in Westminster. Sayer was asked in 1812 this question, "How do you account for the change in the manners and conduct of the people of the metropolis since 1780?"

Sayer modestly replied, "I don't wish to take particular merit to myself. I left the place I was at in consequence of being solicited to come to Bow Street. I was solicited to go there, and I got rid of most of the highwaymen and footpads in a very short space of time. I may say that in six, eight, or ten years there was no such thing heard of. This change had resulted from the increased activity of the police."

A commentator upon this piece of evidence, which he terms the "quackery of Bow Street," observes: "The vanity and assurance of this man far exceeded even those of his comrade Townsend. In a few years, forsooth, Mr. John Sayer, by his simple exertions, extirpated all the highwaymen and footpads in His Majesty's dominions. This is a true specimen of the characteristic quackery of Bow Street, which pervades the whole establishment, and excites disgust in every one who is aware of its object."

When interrogated by the commissioners, Townsend, Sayer, Vickery, and other runners acknowledged the facility which the flash houses afforded them in the detection of thieves. The most notorious of these places was the Brown Bear, opposite the Bow Street office.

Mr. R. Raynsford, a magistrate, explaining the system, said—

"The most notorious thieves would escape if it was not for these particular places of rendezvous.

The officers go into these places at night, where they see and mix with five or six men whom they know to be thieves; and if there have been any information of a robbery having been committed, and they miss one or two of these men on a particular occasion, suspicion naturally falls upon them (owing to their being absent from their usual haunts) that they are in some mischief. Our officers immediately take the risk of apprehending them upon themselves. These men being brought to the office and notice given to the persons who have been robbed, they are frequently identified, and from no other cause but that of being absent from their place of rendezvous, and being known to the police as bad characters. The officers will go into one of these houses, find six or eight notorious characters assembled. The thieves will say, 'Masters, do you want me?' Upon receiving an answer, they will come out and suffer themselves to be searched without any difficulty in the world. When thieves," he added, "quarrel amongst themselves, they will often split from a spirit of revenge."

Vickery maintained that officers could not at one period go into certain houses without a magistrate's warrant. There was, he said, a regular correspondence carried on between the thieves of Birmingham, Liverpool, and Manchester, and other places, and by going to flash houses the officers learned a good deal of information respecting desperate characters in all parts of the country. Vickery was nearly cut to pieces in attempting to arrest two murderers; and he was sometimes away from Bow Street for a fortnight together in apprehending criminals.

A practice grew up in his time of stealing bankers'

parcels on their way from the country to the town houses. Vickery was very successful in apprehending French prisoners of war who had escaped their parole of honour. In later life he became governor of Cold-bath Fields Prison.

Donaldson was another runner, whose reputation for virtue was never very great. He was well acquainted with the haunts, the proceedings, practices, and plans of thieves and pickpockets. He was accustomed to go into a public resort, and suddenly to cry out, "Take care of your pockets," as a warning to the unwary, or, as others said, as a signal to the thieves, for the people who carried purses usually betrayed the fact by slapping their pockets.

Ruthven was the oldest and most celebrated of the survivors of the Bow Street force. For thirty years he was attached to it, and he retired in 1839 on a pension of £220 from the English Government, supplemented by annuities from the Russian and Prussian Governments for his services in discovering forgeries. Amongst his captures were Thistlewood and Thurtell, the murderer of Mr. Weare. He was a most eccentric man, and wrote a history of his life, which he would not publish. Frequently he travelled to the Continent and America in pursuit of criminals.

The mention of Thistlewood obliges us to give a brief reference to the noted Cato Street Conspiracy. On the night of Wednesday, February 23, 1820, a Cabinet dinner was to be held at Lord Harrowby's house in Grosvenor Square. Thistlewood and his accomplices assembled in a loft over a stable in the Edgware Road, near to Tyburn. Their intention was

to murder the ministers, Lord Sidmouth having in particular provoked their animosity. It was arranged that one of the gang should knock at the door with a parcel just at the moment when the statesmen would be sitting down at table. As soon as the door was opened, the others were to rush in, bind or kill the servants, and then burst into the dining-room and massacre the Cabinet. The heads of Lord Sidmouth and Lord Castlereagh were to be brought away in a bag.

Although the authorities had obtained wind of the affair, preparations for the dinner were allowed to go on. On the night arranged, Mr. Birnie, the magistrate, directed a party of officers, including Ruthven and Wright. Ruthven had been watching the loft from the stable opposite. The police surrounded the premises, secured the sentry at the door, and then the patrol burst in, to find nearly thirty conspirators arming themselves with swords, cutlasses, and other weapons.

Thistlewood ran a sword through the body of Smithers, who exclaimed, "Oh, God! I am——" but did not live to finish the sentence.

Ruthven tried to discharge a pistol at Thistlewood, but it missed fire. Westwood was hit in the arm by a shot, Wright was stabbed in the side, and Brookes was shot in the shoulder. The Guards arrived, and the bulk of the gang escaped, but nine of them were recaptured. Thistlewood and others were arrested, and subsequently tried and condemned to death. On the scaffold the prime conspirator is reported to have said, "We shall soon know the grand secret." After their execution, the heads of the criminals were severed



from their bodies, and an eye-witness declared that a large carving-knife was used for the purpose.

Of other renowned runners, Keys is reputed to have caught the last man executed for coining, and Armstrong was distinguished for his hand-to-hand fights with burglars, one of these engagements having taken place on the roofs of Chatham.

Townsend, the *doyen* of the runners, died in 1832. During the passage of the Reform Bill he had been often heard to exclaim: "It's all up now!" On the day of his death he had attended at the Bank of England, where for many years he had been in the habit of going for ten days each quarter, as at dividend times thefts used to be common. He was paid a guinea a day for that duty. Some indication of his loquacious character is here furnished. He was asked by the Parliamentary committee of 1812:—

"Do you think that any advantages arise from a man being put on a gibbet after his execution?"

His reply was as follows:—

"Yes; I was always of that opinion; and I recommended Sir William Scott to hang the two men that are hanging down the river. I will state my reason. We will take it for granted that those men were hanged this morning for the murder of the revenue officers—they are by law dissected. The sentence is that afterwards the body is to go to the surgeons for dissection; there is an end to it, it dies. But look at this. There are a couple of men now hanging near the Thames, where all the sailors must come up; and one says to the other, 'Pray what are those two poor fellows there for?' 'Why,' says the other, 'I will go

and ask.' They ask. 'Why, those two men are hung and gibbeted for murdering His Majesty's revenue officers.' And so the thing is kept alive. If it was not for this, people would die, and nobody would know anything of it.

"In Abershaw's case, I said to the sheriff, 'The only difficulty in hanging this fellow upon the place is its being so near Lord Spencer's house.' But we went down, and pointed out a particular place; he was hanged at the particular pitch of the hill where he used to do the work. If there was a person ever went to see that man hanging, I am sure there was a hundred thousand. I received information that they meant to cut him down. I said to Sir Richard Ford, 'I will counteract this, in order to have it done right. I will go and sit up all night, and have ten officers at a distance, for I shall nail those fellows.' For I talked cant language to him. We had the officers there, but nobody ever came, or else, being so close to Kent Street, they would have come down and sawed the gibbet and taken it all away, for Kent Street was a very desperate place, though it is not so now.

"Lord Justice Eyre once went on the Home Circuit; he began at Hertford, and finished at Kingston. Crimes were so desperate that, in his charge to the grand jury at Hertford, he finished—

"'Now, gentlemen of the jury, you have heard my opinion as to the enormity of the offences committed; be careful what bills you find, for whatever bills you find, if the parties are convicted before me, they are convicted for capital offences. I have made up my mind as I go through the circuit to execute every one.' He did so; he never saved man nor woman, and

a singular circumstance occurred that stands upon record fresh in my mind. There were seven people convicted of a robbery in Kent Street. They called in a pedlar, and after the man had been robbed he jumped out of a window. There were four men and three women concerned ; they were all convicted, and two were hanged in Kent Street, opposite the door ; and, I think, on Kennington Common, eight more, making fifteen. All that were convicted were hanged."

The last execution for piracy on the banks of the Thames was in 1830, fifteen years or so after Townsend had expressed his approval of the punishment.

## CHAPTER V.

## PEEL'S POLICE.

Introduction of the new police (1829)—The necessity for reform—First principles—Establishment of Scotland Yard head-quarters—Objections to proposals—Duke of Wellington's reminiscences—"Peelers"—Outlines of the new system—The last of the watch-boxes—Uniform—Duties of all grades defined—Crying the hour forbidden—Politeness to all insisted upon—Germs of the present code—"The blue devils"—A poetical defence of the superseded Charlies—Complaints of vestrydom—Reply of the commissioners—"Must not talk to the cook"—"Move on"—Is the "frog's march" justifiable?—Collision at Coldbath Fields—Plain clothes "spies."

ONE of the first acts of Mr. Secretary Peel, when he was established at the Home Office in 1828, was to obtain the appointment of a committee of the House of Commons to inquire into the expediency of forming a universal system of police in the metropolis. The committee having reported in its favour, Mr. Robert Peel introduced a Bill into Parliament in the fall of the year. That session was the one which was devoted to the passing of the Catholic Emancipation Act, a measure of such importance that it overshadowed all others.

It was on April 15, 1829, that the Home Secretary rose in his place in the House of Commons to move the second reading of the New Police Bill. The

right honourable gentleman reminded the House that committees had investigated the subject as early as 1770 and 1793, and committees had also sat in the years 1812, 1818, 1822, and 1828. But these inquiries had been the result of alarm, or of some remarkable or unprecedented outrage, or the effect perhaps of a general conviction that crimes and offences against the peace of society were so much on the increase as to require a corresponding vigour on the part of the police.

Unfortunately, these committees produced no improvement of the law, and the subject was lost sight of almost as soon as the alarm subsided.

Mr. Peel enforced upon his hearers the truth that, as compared with the rest of England and Wales at large, the state of crime in the metropolis was very great. One person in every 383 of the population of London and Middlesex had in 1828 been charged with some crime, whereas in the rest of the country the proportion was one out of every 822 of the inhabitants. The right honourable gentleman also showed that in the preceding seven years the number of committals had been getting larger, although the growth of population had not been in the same ratio. It is interesting to note that meanwhile crime had sensibly diminished in other parts of the country.

The figures indicated that the constables of the counties and of provincial towns were doing their duty far more effectually than the watchmen of the metropolis. Peel feared that one of the causes of the great spread of crime was the increased mechanical ingenuity of the age, by which the perpetration of the crime was aided and the means of detection lessened. Criminals were enabled to travel a great distance in a few hours,

and to use great caution in the selection of time and manner.

The real difficulty was the ineffective condition of the police. So long as the then existing night-watch system was persisted in, there would be no efficient police prevention of crime, nor any satisfactory protection of property or person.

Then Peel laid down the main principle which is at the root of our present system. "The chief requisites of an efficient police," he declared, "were unity of design and responsibility of its agents;" and these, he demonstrated, were not only not insured by the watch-house methods, but were actually prevented by them.

What Peel proposed to do was to suppress all the police establishments existing in the metropolis, outside of the City, and to replace them by a single force, effectively organized, and subject to the control of the Home Secretary. It was first to be established in Westminster, and extended to adjoining districts. To carry this idea out it would be necessary to unite under one head all the parochial police authorities, including the nightly watchmen, and this new police would be under the control of a board, whose duty it would be to superintend them and be responsible to the Home Secretary.

The term "watchmen" was to be abandoned, as it was not in very great repute. Two magistrates were appointed to the Board to execute the duties of justices of the peace at the central office (Scotland Yard), and within the limits of the Metropolitan Police District, for the preservation of the peace, the prevention of crime, the detection and committal of offenders, and of carry-

ing into execution the purposes of the Metropolitan Police Act. These justices could not act at any court of general or quarter sessions, or in any matter out of sessions, except those above mentioned.

The watch tax was to be abolished and a general police tax substituted, and the new organization would do away with parochial distinctions.

There were objections to the Bill, on the ground that it did not touch London, and that it transferred to the Home Secretary the powers possessed by local authorities. In reply, Mr. Peel said the City of London had not been included because the committee had reported that the City nightly police was much superior to that at Westminster.

Finally the Bill went through committee on May 19, barely a month having elapsed since its introduction. In the Upper House, the Duke of Wellington reiterated the arguments that had been previously adduced, and asserted that the old watchmen were content with driving thieves out of their own district to their neighbours'. The Iron Duke gave as a reminiscence that, a few years before, on the high-roads scarcely a carriage could pass without being robbed, and frequently the passengers were obliged to give battle to the highwaymen that infested the roads. Such a thing as robbery by a man mounted on horseback was never heard of then (1829), and this change had been the effect of an improved patrol system.

On June 5, the Bill was committed to the House of Lords, and the same year it became law.

It was assailed on all sides. Some took up the cry that it was an invasion of the principle of local self-

government; others described it as the device of a Tory minister, and asserted that the force was to be armed with powers of espionage and of domiciliary visit; whilst there were a few who held that it was intended to put the Duke of Wellington upon the throne.

It was soon seen that it was now no longer a question of a few constables, but a standing army, drilled like soldiers, and acting independently of the ratepayers; and the appointment as one of the justices of Colonel Rowan, who had been employed in the Irish Constabulary, favoured the idea that the new force were to be "a veritable *gendarmérie*."

A "peeler," according to the popular notion of the time, would be a personage with a belt full of pistols and swords. A number of opprobrious names were invented by the crowd, who beset the new officers and hooted at them. They were called, and are called, "bobbies," after Robert; "raw lobsters," in allusion to the blue uniform they wore; "crushers," because of their hustling mobs; "coppers," etc.

It is singular that the name "peeler," now applied to a policeman, was in the sixteenth century given to a robber. Holinshed, in his *Scottish Chronicle* (1570), refers to a Patrick Dunbar who "delivered the countrie from all these peelers." Thomas Mortimer, in his "British Plutarch," Milton, in "Paradise Regained," and Dryden, all use the word "peeler" to mean a plunderer or robber.

Sir Richard Mayne, a barrister, was appointed one of the justices, and he, together with Colonel Rowan, drew up a full list of regulations for the guidance of the new force. They set forth the foundation upon which



the modern English police system rests, and they contain maxims which police officers of all ranks would do well to study.

Promotion and reward would be dependent upon the intelligence and discretion of individuals, and according to their zeal, activity, and judgment.

"It should be understood at the outset," said Sir Richard Mayne, "that the object to be attained is the prevention of crime. To this great end every effort of the police is to be directed. The security of person and property, the preservation of public tranquillity, and all the other objects of a police establishment, will thus be better effected than by the detection and punishment of an offender, after he has succeeded in committing a crime. This should be constantly kept in mind by every member of a police force, as a guide for his good conduct."

In setting out the main features of the new police system, the metropolitan district, comprised within a radius of seven (afterwards extended to twelve, and finally to fifteen) miles round Charing Cross, was to be divided into local divisions. Each division was subdivided into eight sections, each section having eight "beats," a term which was borrowed from the old system. The limits of these were to be clearly defined; each was to have a number entered in a book, and was, in addition to a local name, further to be designated by a letter of the alphabet. In every division there was to be a "station," the new name for a watch-house.

It may be observed that some buildings hitherto used by the watchmen were transferred to the new police, amongst them the hall in Clerkenwell, which is now used by the vestry. The watch-boxes of the

Charlies were, however, more after the pattern of a sentry-box than anything else, having a letter bell on top. Some of the "lock-ups" had as many as four or five rooms, or cells, one of the best being situated in St. Paul's Churchyard.

The new police were required to live near their respective "stations"—another fresh word.

As to the composition of the police force, it was to consist of as many companies as there were divisions, one company being allotted to each division. Five divisions were formed at the outset, with a full strength of eight hundred men. Each company had its superintendent, four inspectors, sixteen sergeants, and 144 constables. A company was divided into sixteen "parties," each of nine men under a sergeant. Four sergeants' parties constituted an inspector's party. The whole company was under the charge of a superintendent.

Every man was conspicuously marked with the letter of his division, and a number corresponding with his name in the books, so that he could be at all times known to the public. The system is still practised.

As to the conditions of service, it was clearly stipulated that a member of the force should devote his whole time to it; that he should reside and serve as he might be appointed; that he should obey all lawful orders, and conform to the regulations of his superiors. One of these was—

"He shall not, upon any occasion, or under any pretence whatsoever, take money from any person without the express permission of the commissioners."

As to his clothing, the constable was dressed in a

suit of blue cloth, the coat single-breasted, with a row of bright white buttons, having a crown with the word "Police" on them. The collar, worn over a high leather stock, was of the stiff stand-up pattern, with an embroidered loop, bearing the letter and number of the individual in the division. The stock was fastened with a brass buckle, and the unfortunate policeman's head was held as tightly as in a vice, making it impossible to look round without turning the whole body. His trousers were of the peg-top fashion, and his boots a pair of "half wellingtons," clumsily made. The hat was a tall chimney-pot, of great weight, with a shining glazed leather top, having a leather support down each side. A constable carried a rattle, and was armed with a staff or bâton, marked "Police Office," and not, as a caricature of the period represented him, "with a short Roman sword" and, in a black belt, a pair of pistols.

In summer, the costume was a swallow-tailed blue coat, with bright metal buttons, white duck trousers, and white Berlin gloves.

Duty was apportioned into a first night relief, from sunset to midnight, and a second night relief, from midnight till morning; and, in the same way, there were two day reliefs.

To each sergeant's party of nine men were assigned eight beats, one man remaining at the station, to form a reserve. The sergeant reported to the inspector, the inspector to the superintendent, and the latter to the office every morning, when sending prisoners to the magistrates' court.

The superintendent, whose salary was £200 per

annum, was held responsible for the general conduct of the officers and men under his charge. He was enjoined to "make himself well acquainted, by frequent personal intercourse, with the inspectors and sergeants, and, through them, with the character and conduct of every man in the company under his orders, and by a firm but kind and conciliating behaviour towards them on all occasions, make them understand that while neglect of duty can in no instance be passed over, every indulgence, consistent with their general efficiency, will at all times be shown to them."

Further, "in observing, with especial attention, the actions of all suspected persons within the division, and in giving directions to his men for this purpose, he will keep in mind that the prevention of crime, the great object of their exertions, will be best attained by making it evident to all such that they are known and strictly watched, and that certain detection will follow any attempt that they may make to commit crime."

Might not these lessons be studied afresh ?

With regard to fire, the superintendent, or in his absence, his subordinates, were ordered to repair to the scene, collecting as strong a force as possible, rendering every assistance. It was added in the instructions that the police would, perhaps, be most useful in procuring a free scope for the firemen's exertions and the parties more immediately interested.

On his part, the inspector, who received £100 a year, was expected to acquaint himself with the talents and general moral character of his men. If on street duty, it was desirable that he should visit every part

of the division if possible, at least once during his turn, at uncertain hours. The inspector at the station had charge of the reserve, the lost property book, the custody of prisoners, and he had to pay particular attention to complaints preferred against the police.

A sergeant was paid 3*s.* 6*d.* per day, or sixpence more than the constable. Before going out with his men, he had to form them into ranks and inspect them, taking care that they were perfectly sober and properly dressed; then he marched with them to his section, and went the round, observing that every man relieved the constable previously on duty. He had constantly to patrol his section, to ensure that the constables discharged their duty. It was impressed upon him that "his superiors particularly desired that he should be civil and obliging to everybody, and render every information and assistance in his power, when called upon."

The duty of the constable was, to make himself familiar with all parts of the section, with the streets, thoroughfares, courts, and houses. He was expected also to possess a knowledge of the inhabitants of each house. He was able to visit every portion of his beat once in ten or fifteen minutes.

We give this part prominence, because here we see the original intention of the founder of the force. It is a good theory, but it is not carried into modern practice.

A constable was told that he would have to perform his duty in silence, and crying the hour was, of course, prohibited. When he took any one into custody, he had to lead him, not to the station, but

to a spot agreed upon, and wait there until another constable came to supply his place. A temporary lock-up was provided in different parts of each division, wherein the prisoner might be lodged, when there was danger of rescue or other emergency; but the use of these places of confinement was not encouraged. He was also warned to spring his rattle as seldom as possible. To the constable, as well as to his superiors, the same lesson was taught. "He shall be civil and obliging to people of every rank and class, and be ready to give information and assistance when required; but he must not enter into conversation with any one while on duty, except on matters relating to his duty."

Then he was also strictly cautioned: "He must be particularly anxious not to interfere idly or unnecessarily, in order to make a display of his authority; when required to act, he will do so with decision and boldness; on all occasions he may expect to receive the fullest support in the proper exercise of his duty."

"It must be remembered there is no qualification so indispensable to a police officer as a perfect command of temper, never suffering himself to be moved in the slightest degree, by language or threats that may be used. If he do his duty in a quiet and determined manner, such conduct will probably excite the well disposed of the bystanders to assist him, if he requires them; but, unless in cases of urgency, he ought not to interfere without having a force sufficient to prevent any opposition."

As Sir Richard Mayne was dealing with an untried body, whose duties and legal powers were fresh to

them, it was deemed necessary to issue provisional instructions, the germ of the present code. The constable was authorized to arrest any person charged with, or suspected to be guilty of, some offence; to enter a house in pursuit of an offender, or to quiet an affray, or search for stolen goods; or to take from another goods which, from some circumstances of suspicion, were supposed to have been stolen. But his whole duty was summed up in the phrase, "to prevent the commission of crime."

At the risk of having been tedious, we have recapitulated the foregoing main points, because they are necessary to show the objects which the justices had in view, and the ridicule with which they were received.

In the year 1830, an anonymous poem was published, entitled "The Blue Devils, or New Police." The satire indicates the view which the public took of Peel's reform; in fact, they clung to the old Charlies, one of whom was depicted on the frontispiece—the victor against two of the new police. Few copies of the work are extant. Some amusing extracts from it may be taken. First, on the serious side of the question, the following notes are given:—

"The watchmen of the ancient *régime*, and the people of the present day, have not unfittingly christened this force by the name of Jenny Darbies—the English way of pronouncing *gens d'armes*, a French civil force, or military *espionage*, which answers the twofold purpose in that country of watching the streets and the people."

Another note ran: "Mr. Whalley, a gentleman of fortune, while riding in his brother's carriage, was

stopped a little way out of town and searched by some new policemen, without assigning any cause or reason."

The poem contained an address of Sir Robert Peel—the name thinly disguised by stars for the intermediate letters—to his "army," which concluded as follows, parodying "Scots wha hae":—

"By your rise and Charleys' fall,  
By our constitutional  
Regard for king and country all,  
Ye shall, ye shall be free!  
Lay the Hunts and Cobbetts low,  
Tyrants them in every row;  
At Spa Fields, or at Peterloo,  
Let us do, or die."

Then there was a story in verse of a party of ladies and gentlemen who had assembled in a tavern to commemorate a birthday. There was music, and there was a policeman outside—on the alert, very much so.

"But to my tale—one songster in that room  
It was known was able passing well to warble  
'I'd be a butterfly,' a songster whom  
This song they quickly called upon to garble.

'So to the grand pianoforte *he* went,  
And scarce had warbled 'Born in a bower,'  
When Thomas passing, thought this most indecent,  
And in a tavern, too, at midnight hour!

"And without further parley they were borne  
Off to the station-house, and there the night,  
Like nightingales, remained, until the dawn,  
When warblers all were suffered to take flight.'

A petition to the king concluded:

"Sire, we urge the aforesaid Bill  
Is not constitutional.  
Never did that Bill inherit  
The English constitution's spirit.



As a civil regulation  
It betrays a violation  
Of our glorious constitution !  
This, Sire, is the true solution ;  
Though civil called, the Bill is very  
Like unto a military  
System—ineffective, too !  
By heavens, Sire, it will not do ! ”

The vestries of London have never been hearty reformers, and in the matter of the new police they considered that they had a grievance, their objections to the system being, firstly, that it was enormously expensive, and, secondly, that alterations were needed to render it more congenial to the habits and feelings of the people. At a meeting of deputations from the various parishes, it was resolved—

“ That the constitution of the new Metropolitan Police force is opposed to the free institutions of this country, which gave to the authorities of each parish the sole control in keeping and securing the peace ; while the establishment of the new police has introduced a system of *espionage* totally repugnant to the habits and feelings of the British people, and has subjected them to a disguised military force. That this meeting are of opinion that the payment, appointment, and discharge of the new police ought to be vested in a board appointed by the parishes or districts who are called upon to pay them.”

This attack was met by statistics showing that the new police cost the ratepayers less, as Parliament contributed £60,000 towards the £206,000, the sum total of the expenditure. It was also contended that new duties were undertaken by the police, as they were called upon to act as inspectors of nuisances, street-

keepers, etc., and they had to do duty at sessions, public police offices, the Houses of Parliament, and the Courts of Justice.

One remarkable fact was adduced in favour of the improved machinery. The loss to the public in small thefts, burglaries, and highway robberies, which had been estimated at £990,000 annually, fell to less than £20,000. A larger proportion of prisoners committed for trial were convicted than under the old system.

In refutation of the charge that they were a disguised military force the following curious statistics were given:—In 1832, the force was comprised of 135 butchers, 109 bakers, 198 shoemakers, 51 tailors, 402 soldiers, 1,154 labourers, 205 servants, 141 carpenters, 75 bricklayers, 55 blacksmiths, 20 turners, 152 clerks, 141 shopmen, 141 superior mechanics, 46 plumbers and painters, 101 sailors, 51 weavers, and 8 stonemasons. The soldiers in the service were as one to eight. As regards the insinuation that the force contained a large number of Irish, the proportions were 20 Englishmen to every 10 Irishmen and every 2 Scotchmen.

These facts, and others to the point, were placed before another conference of the vestries, and they were put into the form of resolutions and adopted, together with the following:—

“That the unfavourable impression and jealousy formerly existing against the new police is rapidly diminishing. Resolved, that this vestry considers it has fully answered the purpose for which it was formed; that it is desirable it should possess the moral force of public opinion, which, united with its

physical force, would tend to render it more efficient and extend its usefulness, and that the Government and individuals should exert themselves to increase its power."

The commissioners or justices in those days lent a ready ear to the complaints of the public. They issued a sort of manifesto, replying to objections that had been raised. Thus it was asserted that the officers gave their evidence in a very loose way, and that, in consequence, juries would seldom convict. To this the official answer in brief was the gentle reminder that judges and magistrates had had represented to them the good conduct of the police.

Sir Richard Mayne also declared that equal attention had been paid to private as well as to public thoroughfares; and further, that instead of crime having increased since the establishment of the Metropolitan Police, all offences, especially those of a more serious nature, had diminished within the district.

It is not to be supposed that in a work of limited dimensions we can record all the orders that have been from time to time issued for the guidance of the force, but we shall have to refer to some of the earliest, as they indicate the difficulties which had to be overcome at the outset, and the spirit with which they were met. For instance, on June 7, 1830, it was necessary to warn the men that "they must not enter into conversation with servant girls and other females," and the policeman who confided in the cook over the area railings was sternly reminded that "his attention must be confined to his beat." It would seem, too,

that constables were given to canine companionship, for they were told that they must not "keep dogs, unless safely locked up." Again, the poor fellows liked to gossip a little, and they were informed that they were expected to go round their beats quietly at night without talking. The wearing of medals, ribbons, and decorations in uniform, except such as had been awarded for public service and allowed by the king, was forbidden. It was necessary repeatedly to inform the mounted men that their horses were not to be used for any but police work. There was also reason to believe that policemen exceeding their duty had been screened by inspectors.

A proper degree of order does not appear to have been maintained in the watch-houses, and a police constable was required to be stationed at the door of the station-house, and he was, in the first instance, to answer any one who came there; "if the person had business there, or otherwise wished it, he was immediately to be shown in to the inspector on duty, who will give him the necessary information, or direct him where to apply."

It was found necessary to condemn "the impropriety of interfering with persons for standing or walking together in the streets," and the commissioner went on to say: "It has appeared in several instances lately that people who were merely talking together have been desired to 'move on,' and much opposition to the police and bad feeling towards them have been in consequence created. The constables are to recollect on all occasions that they are required to execute their duty with good temper and discretion; any

instance of unnecessary violence by them, in striking the party in their charge, will be severely punished. A constable must not use his staff because the party in his custody is violent in behaviour or his language. Constables are not to use language towards parties in custody calculated to provoke or offend them; such conduct often creates a resistance in the prisoner, and hostile feeling among the persons present towards the constable. A constable is to bear in mind that, in taking any one into custody, he is not justified in doing more than is absolutely necessary for the safe custody of the parties whilst he conveys them to the station-house." Is the "frog's march" justifiable after this?

Prominence is given to these extracts, for we are not aware that the orders in question have been countermanded; but, under great provocation no doubt, they appeared to have been lost sight of during the memorable riots of 1887. It is well, therefore, that they should again see the light of day.

The commissioners again cautioned their men, "at a time when the attempt is made to create a strong prejudice against them," to do their duty with every possible moderation and forbearance, so as not to furnish a just ground of complaint against them by any misconduct. Then was added the significant note—significant in the light of subsequent events—"This caution is to be understood as applying on all occasions, but particularly to those on which they are called out in large bodies. It is highly desirable that the constables should not use their truncheons in any manner, without important cause, annoyance, or irritation, except when absolutely necessary."

The commissioners published a number of letters from ratepayers, applauding the behaviour of the new police at fires, in cases of assault, in crowds, in the apprehension of offenders, and in preserving decorum at police courts and sessions.

In 1834, there was a committee appointed to inquire into the working of the system, and they reported that economy pervaded every department; that the duties of constables had been clearly defined in a book of instructions; that great care was exercised in the selection of constables; and that, whilst violent offences had decreased, the detection of lighter offences had increased.

The Bow Street patrolle still continued, and the committee of 1834 recommended that they should be amalgamated, and they also desired to include the City of London and the Thames Police under the jurisdiction of the Home Secretary. The horse patrolle of Bow Street were transferred in 1836, but in 1838 another Parliamentary committee reported that it was expedient to consolidate the several constabulary forces of the metropolis, including those of the City of London and the river Thames, under one authority responsible to the Home Secretary, and they also expressed the opinion that magistrates should have no executive duties in connection with the police.

On May 13, 1833, the new police came into collision with the people at Coldbath Fields. A meeting had been called by the National Union of the Working Classes, for the purpose of adopting measures for holding a national convention. The police had orders to disperse the gathering, and they advanced

from two directions upon the crowd, after opportunity had been given to persons taking part in the assembly to escape. In the *mêlée* a constable was killed with a dagger, and two others were stabbed.

The subject formed matter for an inquiry by a Parliamentary committee, who exonerated the police from the charge of having dispersed the meeting with greater violence than was occasioned by the resistance they met with; but the opinion was expressed that the officers had been suffered to follow persons to a greater distance than was necessary. Interference on the part of the police was to be expected, as the Government had declared the meeting illegal. A coroner's jury brought in a verdict, however, of justifiable homicide.

Another important question was raised in August of the same year on the complaint of a man that the police were used as spies. In this case the committee held that the conduct of the officer was highly reprehensible, but added—

"With respect to the occasional employment of policemen in plain clothes the system affords no just matter of complaint, while strictly confined to detecting breaches of the law and to prevent breaches of the peace, should these things appear otherwise unattainable. At the same time, the committee would strongly urge the most cautious maintenance of these limits, and solemnly deprecate any approach to the employment of spies, in the minor acceptance of the term, as a practice most abhorrent to the feelings of the people and most alien to the spirit of the constitution."

## CHAPTER VI.

## METROPOLITAN POLICE OF TO-DAY.

Successors of Sir Richard Mayne—Colonel Sir E. Henderson—Growth of the force—Strike (1872)—Appointment of Sir Charles Warren (1886)—Reorganization plans—Chief constables and assistant chief constables created—Augmentation of mounted branch—Rearrangement of divisions—Sub-divisional inspectors—Disposition of the police by day and by night—Beats—Standard of height raised—Candidates' Section House—Sir Charles Warren defends drill—Type of modern police station—Pay of all ranks—Pension—Cost of police per man—How the money is spent—The new code—Sir Charles Warren resigns (1888)—“Sorry for the new man.”

**I**T has been during the last half-century that the Metropolitan Police system has been developed to its present high state of efficiency. Nevertheless, in describing the general features of Peel's plan, we were also setting out the characteristics of the modern police force of London, for there has been no departure from the main principles upon which the constabulary of London was framed. We may, therefore, lightly pass over the intervening period.

From time to time the Police Acts of 1829, 1839, and 1840 have been amended. Colonel Henderson became chief commissioner in February, 1869, in room of “Dickey” Mayne, deceased. Sir Edmund had succeeded Sir J. Jebb in the English Convict



Department, where he had carried out many reforms. As commissioner, his first business was to issue an annual report, the first to appear being dated 1870, when the total number of constables was 8,883. Four district superintendents were appointed in 1869. In 1870, "fixed points" were first established—that is, men were placed on duty at definite points and not on beats. In 1872, from the 17th to the 24th of October, and in November, large meetings of the police were held to agitate for an increase of pay. Negotiations had been for some time proceeding between the commissioner and a committee representing the men, who gained the victory, the scale of pay being increased about 20 per cent. Some one in authority, however, resented the action of the delegates, and their secretary was removed to Brockley, in Kent. He declined to go, and was dismissed, whereupon the men one night refused to go on duty, alleging that if the secretary were guilty so were they. Ultimately they obeyed orders, but three of them were prosecuted. The authorities carefully picked out two men who had been delegates and whose action they had condoned by negotiating with them, and finally they suspended all the subordinates, 179 in number, 69 of whom were dismissed.

Large additions to the force resulted from the dynamite panic. In March, 1886, Sir Edmund Henderson retired from his post, which was presently filled by Sir Charles Warren, who had gained distinction in South Africa.

Under Sir Edmund's administration, in the language of Sir William Harcourt, than whom no man was in a better position to form an opinion, "things

went very smoothly both inside and outside Scotland Yard, although he had to deal with very troubled times. Although a military man, Colonel Henderson did not govern the police in a military spirit. Sir E. Henderson followed Sir R. Mayne, and both were admirable commissioners. It was said that the former was not sufficiently vigorous and active, but there were other merits than vigour and activity. Sir E. Henderson was calm and self-possessed; he was not fussy and fidgety, and he thoroughly understood and had great reliance upon the general disposition to order and good behaviour on the part of the population."

Sir Charles Warren held different views, and it is with his short but eventful rule that we have now to deal.

In a future chapter we shall have occasion to refer at length to the riots of February, 1886, which were useful in that they displayed the weakness of the whole police system. A committee had sat in private to ascertain the cause of the disturbance in the West End, and the conduct of the police. Mr. Childers was then Home Secretary. The committee reported that the duties and responsibilities of the superior officers of the force were not well distributed, and there was a lack of intercommunication between different branches of the police. A second committee was ordered. In the mean time Sir Charles Warren, who was in Egypt, was asked by telegram whether he would take the office of commissioner. Sir Charles accepted, but evidently under the impression that he was asked to reorganize the police. On his arrival in London he attended a second committee, of five persons. The report pointed out that for local pur-

poses the force was practically without superior officers ; that beyond the local superintendents, who were purely district officers, there were none to carry out the orders of the chief commissioner or to make inquiries ; that there was no independent and effective inspection of the stations, and that there was a consequent lack of efficiency. It was further pointed out that the want of superior officers led to undue centralization in Scotland Yard, and that reports with respect to promotion came from those who had themselves been recently promoted from the ranks. For these and other reasons it was recommended that officers of superior rank should be introduced between the chief commissioner and the superintendent. Substantially the same recommendation had been made in 1879, but it had only been partially carried out. It was recommended, as in 1879, that the persons to be appointed to the new office of chief constable should be gentlemen of good social standing, such as officers of the army or navy, but it was not recommended that they should be taken exclusively from those classes.

Sir Charles Warren, therefore, entered office determined to bring about reforms. It is unfortunate that he is a military man, for on that account he was charged with errors of administration which would never have been laid at the door of a civilian.

Under the chief commissioner in 1886, Mr. Walker filled the office of district superintendent of No. 1 district, and Mr. Howard of No. 2 district. Very speedily four districts were arranged in place of two—No. 1, the eastern, being given to Lieut-Colonel B.

Moncell, called chief constable ; No. 2, the northern, to Mr. Howard, no longer a district superintendent ; No. 3, the western, to Colonel Roberts ; and No. 4, the southern, to Major W. E. Gilbert. Three of the appointments were therefore given to new men, and these were military officers and not civilians. Mr. Walker had resigned with Colonel Henderson. In his last report Sir Charles contended that by the appointment of a chief constable to each of the four police districts, there was an efficient chain of responsibility between the commissioner and the constable, which had greatly conduced to the efficiency of the force. Mr. Williamson was also made a chief constable, attached to the Detective Department.

In 1887, the commissioner carried into effect further proposals. He created two assistant chief constables—one, Captain Knollys, having the charge of the candidates' class, now located at Kennington, where systematic instruction in police duties is given to recruits ; and the other, Captain Dean, who was placed in direction of the mounted branch, acting under the chief constable.

This mounted branch was very much enlarged in 1886, with the result that horse patrols on well-defined beats were increased in number. For a while, until its transfer to the assistant chief constable, the superintendent of the H division had charge of the saddlery store, who says, " The mounted branch from this store is kept in a state of thorough efficiency, articles worn out or damaged being immediately replaced on requisition by the superintendent, in lieu of the old practice of waiting till the requisition had passed through the various offices, and the contractor

subsequently communicated with, thus causing a horse on many occasions, and his rider also, to be idle for days while a broken leather or stirrup-iron was being replaced. This store, although in its infancy, has worked admirably, and will doubtless as it gains greater system be seen to more advantage."

Divisional stores had also been established, for the prompt supply of stable utensils.

The horse patrols are practically the survival of the horse patrol placed under the new police in 1836.

In Sir Charles Warren's term of office there was a considerable rearrangement of divisions, consequent upon the creation of two new ones—the J in the east and the F in the west. The Metropolitan Police District, as established by 2 & 3 Vict. c. 47, extends over a radius of fifteen miles from Charing Cross exclusive of the City of London and the liberties thereof, and embraces an area of 688·31 square miles, extending from Colney Heath, Hertfordshire, on the north, to Mogadore, Todworth Heath, in the south, and from Lark Hall, Essex, in the east, to Staines Moor, Middlesex, in the west. Including the Thames, there are twenty-two divisions lettered according to the alphabet, but the letters I, O, Q, U, and Z are missing. A is Whitehall; B, Westminster; C, St. James's; D, Marylebone; E, Holborn; F, Paddington; G, Finsbury; H, Whitechapel; J, Bethnal Green; K, Bow; L, Lambeth; M, Southwark; N, Islington; P, Camberwell; R, Greenwich; S, Hampstead; T, Hammersmith; V, Wandsworth; W, Clapham; X, Kilburn; and Y, Highgate.

The names given to the divisions, however, are scarcely representative, as in the outer circle the extreme limits are much removed from the place which gives the title; for instance, the extreme limit of the J is not Bethnal Green, but Loughton; and the southernmost point of W is not Clapham, but Reigate.

The total population approaches five and a half millions. The police are, of course, very unequally distributed, being chiefly concentrated in the inner circle and thickly populated divisions, A to H and L and M, which have an area of 19·29 square miles, as compared with 659 square miles comprised within the suburban outer circle, which embraces, as we have shown, some genuine rural localities. It is said that the latter are insufficiently protected; it is also the fact that the town divisions are undermanned, and that frequently the beats are not filled up for the want of men, although the number of the police, including those employed by Government and private firms, already exceeds fourteen thousand.

Sir Charles Warren increased the number of inspectors and sergeants, reducing that of the constables, which enabled the hours of duty at busy stations to be reduced from twelve to eight per day.

A new rank, the sub-divisional inspector, was created. Superintendent Dunlop, of A division, and now on the retired list, writing on this subject, stated: "During the year an increase has been made in the staff of inspectors, and by a rearrangement of their duties a more complete and effective control in the subdivisions has been gained. This was a much-needed step. At the present time, in every hour of the twenty-four there are officers of superior rank on

duty throughout the metropolis, and the appointment of a sub-divisional inspector in charge gives an absolute and positive control and communication between a superintendent and divisional inspector through the sub-divisional inspector which never before existed. . . .

" The appointment of divisional clerks also as sub-inspectors, after a period of probation in the divisional office, is an acknowledgment of work of a body of most excellent men, and one that is much appreciated, not only by the men themselves, but by their superior officers. In my own office the amount of clerical labour is immense. It is essentially a division of special duties, and some idea of the accounts that have to be prepared and the books kept can be gleaned from the statement that the cash book shows a total during the twelve months of money to the amount of £89,316, which passed through the office."

Exclusive of the police specially employed, the number available for metropolitan service is upwards of 12,500; but an average of one-fourteenth of the force is daily on leave, each man having a day's holiday once a fortnight. Of the remainder, about 2,500 men are employed on station and outside protection duties, or under special Acts of Parliament, and over 400 are usually on sick leave, so that for street duty about 9,000 men are at command.

During the daytime the ordinary beats of the metropolis are covered by about 1,500 men; but in addition some 500 constables are stationed at "fixed points," where, between the hours of nine a.m. to one a.m., they may always be found. About 80 more are detailed to attend hackney-carriage standings.

In town districts, day duty of sixteen hours is

divided into four reliefs, *i.e.* four hours on and four hours off, commencing at six a.m. and ending at ten p.m. ; in country districts there are two reliefs only, and the men do eight hours' consecutive duty. Forty per cent. of the men are thus engaged. When on night duty, they, in all cases, have to turn out at ten p.m. and remain until six a.m. Sixty per cent. of the available police are on this watch. One month's day duty is succeeded by two months' night duty. In each station there is what is called the roster posted up, by which the hours of duty of each man are readily ascertained. Under pressure, leave of every kind may be suspended, and the working of the beats organized to meet emergencies.

In outer suburban neighbourhoods a beat may be four hours long ; and double patrols, first introduced in 1867, consequent upon Fenianism, and continued on account of burglars, were for a time arranged. The total length of the streets and roads patrolled by the police is over 8,300 miles. Beats are worked at the regulation rate of two and a half miles per hour, and the average length all over the district is seven and a half miles for day duty, and for night duty two miles ; but of course in thickly populated parts they are much shorter. A register is kept of all beats. By day the constable keeps to the kerb side of the pavement, and by night he takes the inner side, the better to examine the bolts and fastenings of houses with his lantern. Since 1884 he has carried a whistle in place of a rattle ; and for wet weather he is furnished with a cape.

During the reign of Sir Charles Warren the standard of height was raised, except in special cases, from 5 ft. 8½ in. to 5 ft. 9 in., and the examination



of education and physique has also been rendered more rigid. Nevertheless the number of candidates continues to increase. The limit of age is now twenty-seven.

Another great improvement was made in 1886, and the credit of it has been given quite unjustly to Sir Charles Warren. We refer to the Candidates' Section House, and we are in the position to state that this important department was due to the suggestion of Sir Edmund Henderson in December, 1885, which was some months before Sir Charles's appointment. Sir Charles, however, opened the building, and was the first to appoint an assistant chief constable to instruct the candidates.

The recruits come from all parts of England, except the extreme north, where the attractions of Liverpool, Leeds, Manchester, and Glasgow hold sway. There is a fair proportion of Londoners, who generally are of not such fine physique, and the home counties contribute their share of policemen.

In the Candidates' Section House the recruit obtains the first idea of discipline, and receives preliminary instruction in his future duties. Formerly the candidates lodged where they could in the neighbourhood of Wellington Barracks, St. James's Park, where they were drilled daily. When Mr. Monro became connected with the Metropolitan Police, he was instrumental in providing for them a recreation-room, furnished with a library, etc. From that germ proceeded the present Section House in Kennington Lane, adjoining the yard of the district police station, and opposite the Lambeth Court House and Fire Brigade Station. The candidates are lodged in a lofty

building of red brick ; and as regards architecture, there is nothing about it in common with the older police buildings. In elevation it is pleasing to the eye, and even handsome, although there is a pretty general misconception that it is a workhouse. Workhouses in these days, however, are palaces. The Section House has two wings, built at the rear of its frontage, which enclose a small court. Entering by the door, the visitor is admitted into a lobby which is deficient in one respect, for it is wanting in an office for the use of the sergeant in charge. This custodian during his leisure makes the kitchen his retreat. The sergeant is the local representative of Captain Knollys, who has control of this branch of the Metropolitan Police. We may premise that from time to time there are "calls" upon the candidates who have entered their names for admission, to join the force. Some weeks the calls may be heavy, and at other times very light. Nominally there are over eight hundred men whose names appear upon the list waiting for vacancies ; but many of them have obtained other employment before their turn comes. Each man has to furnish satisfactory references as to character, and show himself to be intelligent, whilst he must also pass the medical examination. We will assume that, this investigation having been satisfactory, the candidate is called and chosen.

If a countryman, he is required immediately to proceed to London ; and if a Londoner, he is likewise directed to take up his quarters at Kennington. It makes no difference whether a man is married or single, or whether he has served his apprenticeship in any other force. Every man must commence at the lowest rung of the ladder, and undergo three weeks' training.

The Section House, nevertheless, is more of a lodging-house than a school. It is not a barrack. Its proper name is "a home ;" and it must prove of real benefit to young men fresh from the country and strange to the ways of a great city, for it provides them with comfort and ensures them protection from many dangers. The married man, too, who leaves his family behind him until settled, is spared a good deal of anxiety, and can therefore give his best attention to the rudiments of his new occupation. Moreover, the spirit of independence is never encroached upon—every man pays his own way.

A candidate, from the date of his entering the Section House, is paid 15s. per week. Out of this sum he is charged 1s. per week for his quarters, which includes washing of sheets, etc., and from 7s. to 8s. per week for his board. He has therefore 6s. in hand. He retains his own clothing.

The cost of board varies, and the inmates get the advantage when there is any. Thus experience has shown that with a full house the catering per head is a few pence cheaper than when the inmates are comparatively few. Owing to causes which have been mentioned already, there may be sometimes as many as eighty-one candidates in the Section House—the full number—or not more than a dozen. The sergeant acts as caterer. He orders in all the butcher's meat, groceries, etc., and, with the assistance of a cook and two or three volunteer helps, serves out the cooked meats.

Our narrative has brought us back to the kitchen, in which we found ourselves upon quitting the entrance lobby. This kitchen is fitted with a range and a

copper, but the latter is used for no other purpose than the making of coffee or tea. In the morning, at eight o'clock, breakfast is served on a methodical plan. Adjoining the kitchen there is a large mess-room, occupying one floor of the right wing. It has long tables, at which the men sit, but they file before a counter communicating with the kitchen, to get their coffee in the morning and tea in the evening. Their bread and butter they keep in their own possession, the butter being handed to them each week, three-quarters of a pound per man, and the bread every evening, a twopenny loaf apiece.

Where, then, do the men store these provisions? In little safes, constructed on approved principles in tiers, and provided with locks and keys, every one being duly numbered. These safes stand in a cool corridor. Dinner, at half-past twelve o'clock, consists of three-quarters of a pound of boiled or roast meat, two vegetables, and sometimes pudding. Tea is like breakfast; and supper may be made of bread-and-cheese, with a glass of ale, procured on the premises at three-halfpence a pint, or lemonade equally as cheap. There is a small charge of 4*d.* per week for the replacement of the utensils, and 4*d.* per man goes in charing expenses, so that the cost of feeding a policeman in training is practically a shilling per day.

When Londoners outnumber the provincial recruits, the cost is at its minimum; for they generally have less robust appetites. We say generally, because the only man who has ever complained, like *Oliver Twist*, that he wanted "more" was a stalwart cockney who is now a member of the A division. Appetite, however, is not the governing cause, but absence. The

regulations permit of men visiting their families, and on Sundays they can take their meals at home, if conveniently near. The candidates, after six p.m. every night, are at liberty to do what they please until 10.30 p.m., when they must return, unless an extension of leave has been granted until midnight. There are special days when this permission may be obtained at the rate of two nights per week, so there is nothing which can be termed an unnecessary restriction of personal liberty.

Every inducement has been furnished to keep the men away from vicious amusements. They can buy their beer in little earthen pitchers at the canteen, and hence there is no need to frequent the public-house. There are a large recreation-room filled with bagatelle and billiard-tables, and a reading-room supplied with the daily, illustrated, and comic papers, besides the nucleus of a library sufficiently well patronised; and in the mess-room, boxing gloves and Indian clubs may be used. All these apartments are light and comfortable, pleasantly but plainly furnished, well warmed and airy. In them a stranger finds cheerful society, and he enters upon his new career under most encouraging auspices. Of course, there are necessary rules which tend to cultivate habits of obedience and of tidiness, but there is no severe dictatorship. It may here be stated that breaches of discipline are rare, and that the class who attempt to sail as near to the wind as possible are generally the army reserve men. By the way, the Metropolitan Police numbers over five hundred who have served in the army.

For candidates who desire to gain a practical knowledge of telegraphy on the A. B. C. instruments,

the necessary appliances are at hand. The A. B. C. instrument is practically the marshal's bâton of the police force. Facility to read the messages has frequently been the means of bringing a constable under the notice of his superiors, which is the first step to promotion. Yet it is strange that some men altogether disregard this means of advancement, and take little interest in the apparatus because of the extra trouble involved.

The intervals of leisure which the men have are spent in the rooms we have described. A man rises at seven, cleans his boots, brushes his clothes—for which a special room is provided—and is ready for breakfast at eight. Half an hour later he is on his way to Wellington Barracks, where he is drilled for three hours by instructors and by officers of police. He returns to Kennington for dinner, and spends the afternoon in more drill—if in the first or second squad, at Kennington; or if in the third, at Wellington Barracks. Then, in the evening, he either goes out, or plays chess or billiards, reads, writes, or talks until bed-time, having had, during the day, no menial work to do whatever.

On the subject of drill, Sir Charles Warren wrote thus in *Murray's Magazine*: "It is necessary that the constable, after he is appointed, should keep up sufficient knowledge of drill to enable him to march in file from one street to another, or to form up quickly in times of procession and on *fête*-days, in order to line the streets."

"This drill occupies one hour per week (on pay-days) during the summer months or other warm weather, and is knocked off in very hot or very cold or

wet weather, or when there is special business. The result is that in the September quarter (1888), which is the quarter in which there is most drill, there were eight drill days on the average, with an average of 3,500 men attending. This is equivalent to two hours' drill per man per quarter. And, taking into consideration the lesser amount of drill during the other quarters, the average is about *six hours' drill per annum*.

"During the years 1886 and 1887 the drill was almost entirely given up. This fact will possibly give some idea of the incorrect statements recently circulated concerning the excessive drill to which the members of the Metropolitan Police are subjected. When constables and sergeants are promoted, they are required to be able to give words of command to the men they march about, and if not able to pass in drill, are put through a course of from ten to fourteen days. The drill-book has been revised during 1886, and only details of the most simple description have been inserted in it, such as are absolutely necessary for police duties, and only extending to squad drill. Police are not now drilled in companies as in former days.

"It is quite untrue that there has been any attempt to make soldiers of the police, but there are certain attributes and qualifications which have been aimed at which pertain also to the soldier, sailor, postman, railway guard, or, in fact, to any citizen who joins an organized service.

"It is also quite incorrect that a large number of reserve or discharged soldiers have been recently added to the police force. The commissioner has for some years been restricted to the number of five hun-

dred army reserve men at one time, and the reduction of limit to twenty-seven years of age has diminished the number of discharged soldiers joining during the last two years, though exceptions are made in the case of a discharged non-commissioned officer with very good testimonials and character.

"The great object of the superior officers has been to keep well in view the fact that constables are citizens acting among and assisted by their fellow-townsmen, and there are probably no persons in this country who have a better knowledge of their position, duties, and obligations as citizens than officers who have served in the army."

Returning to the section houses, the question may be asked, "What is the staff?" There is none, if we except the sergeant, the cook, and the instructor. We have explained how the difficulty of supplying meals is surmounted. The only other domestic matter is the charing, and that is done by contract on the principle that a certain sum is paid for keeping the ground-floor clean, and a further sum for making the beds and scrubbing the floors, subject to a reduction for each vacant bed. In this way the work is done by women, who are not required to be constantly about the place.

There are four dormitories, the largest containing twenty-seven beds, with a partition dividing the apartment into two wards. The beds are of iron, placed some distance apart, and they have sheets, changed weekly, three blankets, and a rug. Each man has a spacious numbered locker with three shelves, which are shaped in such a way as to add an umbrella stand, so that there is no excuse for



leaving anything about. The floors are regularly scrubbed, and when this is done the fires are lighted. Attention is given to such matters as the airing of bed-linen and the opening of windows, and habits of cleanliness are induced by the liberal provision of lavatories and baths. Every candidate on entering must have a bath. If his clothes get wet, there is a capital drying-room; and, in fact, there is nothing omitted which can contribute to a man's comfort and happiness. At the expiration of his three weeks, the candidate is "posted" to his division. He knows the fact on the Friday night, and on the Monday he is fitted out with his uniform at Scotland Yard, and sleeps that night at a section house, either attached to, in a separate building, or under the same roof as a police station.

There has been a marked development in the building policy of the Metropolitan Police authorities during the past eight years. In 1880, a confidential report was made to the Home Secretary as to the condition of the stations, and the recommendations then made have gradually been adopted. The recently erected buildings are no longer of yellow brick, with stone facings, that with the grime of London soon became black. Red brick is now used with pleasing effect, and the exterior of the modern police office loses in consequence somewhat of its erstwhile forbidding features.

However, within the metropolitan area there are two hundred police stations, of all sorts. Their character is generally determined by the position of their sites. Here and there one may find old houses, once the residences, it may be, of merchants, converted into

quarters for the police. Leman Street station is an example of this class. In suburban districts private houses are also adapted for the same purposes. In the inner ring of London may be seen large stations of the style which was in vogue prior to 1880. Bow Street and Commercial Street offices are good illustrations of these. Islington (Upper Street) is another of the same kind, with the advantage of a rather large yard. All the old stations, however, are subject to a great drawback. Owing to the dirty habits of the prisoners, the cells have generally become so much infested with vermin that they have occasionally to be removed in pails. In the improved stations this matter has been remedied. We have in mind the station at Limehouse, which has been recently opened. It is not a large station, if one judges it from the point of view of sleeping accommodation, for it provides quarters for not more than thirty men, but it occupies a piece of land large enough to enclose a spacious drill-ground, on the three sides of which two-storied buildings are erected of red brick, with ornamental but not costly frontages. There are three blocks—the administrative, the residential, and the stables. The loftiest block faces the West India Dock Road, and it is pierced by an archway, through which a cart may be driven. On the one side one may find the charge-room, cells, inspector's room, and waiting-room, and above them the superintendent's apartments, the detectives' room, the divisional clerks' office, and store cupboards. On the other side of the archway there are the quarters for the single men, consisting of, on the ground-floor, a series, providing kitchens, mess-room, a recreation-room, baths, boot-room, a drying-room, an airing-

room, and a brushing-room, and, on the floor above, a hospital, day-room, and dormitory. Adjoining the kitchens there is a covered drill-shed, and facing it, across the triangle, are the stables, with stalls for five or six horses, coach-house, and rooms for the coachmen. The whole arrangement is airy, bright, and pleasing.

There are one or two points which require more detailed description. On entering by the public door from the street, the visitor comes immediately into communication with the inspector, and if he has to wait, there is a room close at hand. For the want of such accommodation in other stations, privacy has been almost impossible, and when such has been imperative, it has been secured by closing the outer doors, which has stopped the routine of the office. On other occasions strangers have been admitted into the charge-room, where they have heard and seen things which they had no right to know. Another difficulty in some stations has been the conveyance of a drunken prisoner to the cells. At Limehouse, there is an uninterrupted passage-way from the street to the cells, and there are no corners to be cleared, or other such obstructions. Again, the cells themselves are warmed, not by the old plan of putting a stove in the corridor, which made it as hot as an oven and left the cells cold, but by steam pipes built into the wall, which maintain an equal temperature. In size the cells are about 10 ft. by 5 ft. 6 in. There is a window, strongly barred, but large, and out of reach of the prisoner's hands. In the door there is a spy-shutter, to enable the constable in charge to observe what is going on within the cell without unlocking

the heavy portal. But the chief improvement is the fixing of the plank-bed at a little distance from the painted brick walls, by which means the harbouring of vermin is got rid of.

As for the constables' quarters, the most interesting point is the completeness of the plan, everything to ensure the policeman's comfort having been studied. The single man is enabled to get a good meal, to dry his boots and clothes, to enjoy his leisure in the recreation-room or library, and to secure attention when sick. At night he retires to his own bed, or bunk, which is placed in a private cabin, 10 ft. by 5 ft., which also contains a locker and a desk, at which the inmate may write. Well-ventilated, cheerful, nicely decorated—who can say that these quarters are dear at a shilling a week?

We must not omit to mention that the Metropolitan Police stations are now invariably furnished with an ambulance. About four or five years ago a dozen were ordered on trial, and they have now become a very necessary part of the equipment.

Lodgings for policemen, if single, are provided at many section houses besides the one described, a shilling a week being deducted from the pay. For this sum the use of bed, mess, library, and recreation rooms is included, together with baths, and in some cases the sleeping quarters are on the cubicle system. A library is also available. The mess is under the men's direction. An anonymous writer, describing himself as an "Ex-Police Official," has argued that an adequate rent ought to be charged for such accommodation, and the Police Fund would gain at least £6,000 a year by an additional shilling per week. If the

constable lives out of the section house he has about 3*s.* 6*d.* a week rent to pay ; or, if married, about 6*s.* 6*d.* for suites of rooms. These are to be had in the improved industrial dwellings, which have been erected on the sites of disreputable tenements. The Receiver of Police, in 1884, fitted up in Peter Street, St. James's, quarters for single men. Superintendents of police, as a rule, regard with disfavour private lodgings for single policemen, as not being conducive to morals or discipline. Again to quote Mr. Dunlop—"From personal experience I can assert that section-house life, with its strict arrangements, its great comfort, and the benefit of discussion, in which the older constables join, on topics of interest concerning the service, is invaluable in the formation of the young policeman's character. Although from a monetary point of view there may be some delay in providing sufficient accommodation, anything that tends to elevate and enlighten the police constable is a decided gain to the public."

Pay of metropolitan policemen is subject to deductions for pension, and the constable contributes on the average about twopence a week to gratuity funds for the widows and orphans of comrades deceased. A constable entering the force as a duly qualified recruit starts at 24*s.* per week, with clothing, and as he rises in the ranks, after about eight years' service, he receives £78 per annum. About 5,000 policemen earn 30*s.* a week. Promoted to a sergeant, which should be in less than ten years, the officer, who starts at 34*s.* per week for the first two years, has 36*s.* for the next three years, and then 38*s.* ; and at the top of the list there is one sergeant who is paid £166 per annum.

He next passes into the class of the inspectors, of which there are three grades, at £187. Attaining to the position of divisional superintendent, the pay commences at £300, and rises £10 annually to £475. In addition to this scale, reserve men receive extra pay at the rate of 1s. 6d. per week for constables, 3s. a week for sergeants, and 4s. for inspectors; and allowances for special duty range from 2s. to 19s. 2d. per week.

If a constable is killed on duty, his widow receives a pension of £15, and each child an allowance of £2 10s. yearly until the age of 15. In the case of officers above the rank of sergeant, the widow's allowance is £25, and the child's £5 per annum.

There are 3,905 police pensioners, to whom upwards of £185,000 is disbursed annually, and 58 constables in one year (1887-88) were awarded gratuities amounting to over £3,000. The money was obtained chiefly from the Metropolitan Police Fund. No policeman may retire on a pension under sixty years of age, unless on the certificate of the chief surgeon that he is unfit for duty.

The rates of pensions are three-tenths of pay for fifteen years' service; increasing with every additional year until, on completion of twenty-eight years, the constable becomes entitled to a retiring allowance of two-thirds of his pay. For five years' service, gratuities are paid, at the rate of one month for every year.

The total yearly expenditure of the Metropolitan Police is over a million and a half sterling, of which £572,000 is paid by the Government towards the cost of pay and clothing. A local rate of just under 5d. in the pound produced £700,000. Per man, a

constable costs £106 per annum, of which £78 15s. is disbursed in pay, £10 in superannuation charge, and £5 in clothing and equipment. On joining the force, the policeman is supplied with two great-coats, two tunics, a cape, two pairs of trousers, two pairs of boots, two helmets, a truncheon, armlets, whistle, lantern guard, belt, etc., which articles are renewed periodically, or when worn out.

Sir Charles Warren's term of office will be for long associated with a work which was brought to completion by him. He caused to be compiled a code containing, properly classified, the police "orders" which from time to time had been issued during the last seventeen years. There was great need for such a work for the guidance of the police, although Mr. Vincent's code had to some extent anticipated the volume. An instruction book is now in preparation.

*Punch* had a cartoon upon the commissioner's resignation in 1888.

Sir Edmund Henderson, addressing his successor: "My dear Warren, you did too much!"

Sir Charles Warren: "And you, my dear Henderson, did too little!"

Mr. Punch (*sotto voce*): "H'm—sorry for the new man."

Mr. James Monro, C.B., the "new man," is a son of the late Mr. George Monro, solicitor. Proceeding to India about 1860, when quite a young man, he filled in succession the offices in the Bengal Presidency of assistant magistrate and collector, district judge, and finally Inspector-General of Police. It was by chance that Mr. Monro was in this country when Mr. Howard Vincent resigned his directorship of the Criminal In-

vestigation Department. Mr. Monro was appointed assistant commissioner and head of the detective branch. During his stay in Scotland Yard, whilst holding this office, Mr. Monro was very popular with the force. While necessarily exacting as a disciplinarian, he was always courteous and considerate to the men.



## CHAPTER VII.

## WITHIN THE CITY OF LONDON.

The Watch Act police--Marshals and marshalmen--City Police Act of 1839--Jealousy of Sir George Grey and Sir R. Mayne--The City vindicated--Politeness a characteristic--The chiefs--Stations--No. 26, Old Jewry--City detectives--The brothers Forester--Differences of uniform--Pay good, but no pension--The City purse--Traffic of London--Foreign hawkers--Civic festivities--Jubilee Ball--Attack upon the Mansion House (1882).

**N**OTWITHSTANDING everything which may be urged and has been said to the contrary, the little square mile of land in the heart of London, and which is known as the "City," has set many a fruitful example to the scattered authorities of the rest of the metropolis. In matters of police the City may claim to have led the way in the road to reform, and it is by no means behind the force which is controlled by the Home Secretary. History shows how valiantly and successfully the Corporation have fought the cause of independence, thus asserting the principle that the capital of the United Kingdom has a title to the government of its guardians of the peace, and has done nothing to deserve treatment differing scarcely from the semi-military rule to which Ireland is subjected.

Under the Watch Act of 1829, night watchmen, separate from the day police, were appointed, the cost of this establishment being £37,000 per annum, which was levied by a watch-rate. There were besides ward constables, who were paid £4,000 per annum, and another £10,000 was yearly paid to the marshmen and day police.

It was with the day and night patrol that the Court of Aldermen concerned themselves. A superintendent had command of the day patrol, consisting of twelve officers, and the assistant superintendent had charge of the night patrol of similar strength. The stations were at the Mansion House, London Bridge, Portsoken, Bishopsgate, Fleet Market, and St. Andrew, Holborn. The day patrol regulated the traffic, removed obstructions, took up vagrants, and prevented begging in the streets. They had to attend at their respective stations once every hour.

The uniform was a blue coat, drab waistcoat, with the City button, and blue trousers. The night patrol were furnished with a dark great-coat at the City's expense. The day men received 5s. 3d. per day, and the night patrol 4s. 2d. per night. No sum was allowed for attending executions, whippings, or other duties previously called "extra," except Sunday duty, which was paid at the rate of 4s. per day. Smithfield Market required special arrangements, the hours being from five a.m. summer, and six a.m. winter, until four p.m. on Mondays, and until seven p.m. on Fridays. Eight constables were allotted to this duty. Constables were also attached to the Justice Room at the Mansion House and the Guildhall.

Marshals had to hire the constables—"decent

men, whose places of abode and characters are known." They had to receive reports from their marshalmen ; to preserve the peace at Bartholomew Fair ; to perambulate frequently the several wards of the City by night, and see that the constables and watchmen were on duty.

The marshalmen attended at the Mansion House to execute warrants and summonses within ten miles of the Royal Exchange. They mustered and inspected both the day and night patrol previously to their proceeding on their daily and nightly duty, and also on their going off, and to certify to the marshals the causes of absence of those who failed to attend.

Orders on similar lines to the foregoing instructions were reissued in 1836. It will be seen that they contained many of the maxims of the modern police system. The ward constables had been got rid of and the number of watch-houses reduced from twenty-nine to six, when the government of the force was vested in the committee appointed by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen. How satisfactory the City Police were to the people is shown by the fact that in 1839, when a Bill was before the Commons to amend the Police Acts, the first ten clauses, relating to the City of London, were struck out, the Government declaring "that they were convinced that a good and efficient police would be kept up under the superintendence of those who now held the power."

In 1839, the City Police Act was passed, and the office of commissioner came into existence, the appointment being made by the Common Council. The power to lay down regulations relative to the general govern-

ment of the police is vested in the commissioner, subject to the approval of the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the Secretary of State. Regulations were issued from time to time for the guidance of the six divisions of the force. In each division was placed a watch-house, viz. at Moor Lane, Smithfield, Black-horse Court, Fleet Street, Garlick Hill, Tower Street, and Bishopsgate Churchyard.

It is unnecessary to describe in detail the duties of the various grades, as they approximated to those of the Metropolitan Police. Attached to the chief office, a reserve company was formed to supply vacant beats in case of illness, and to attend Smithfield Market. They also had to furnish the men required during the sittings of the Central Criminal Court and the other courts in the City; public meetings and ceremonies likewise fell to their supervision.

The Act provided that no member of the force should vote in a Parliamentary election, and every constable was to be sworn in. Superannuation allowances were fixed.

In case of emergency, the Secretary of State may, at the request of the Lord Mayor, authorize the Metropolitan Police to act within the City of London under the command of their own officers; and, on the other hand, the Lord Mayor may, at the request of the Secretary of State, in like emergency, authorize the City Police to act under their own officers within the Metropolitan Police District.

The City Police do not receive any support from the Treasury, but a quarter of the expense is borne out of the City purse.

Before dealing with the City Police as they exist

to-day, we may for a moment refer to the attempt made by Sir George Grey, in 1863, to amalgamate the force with the Metropolitan. It was the last of the many recommendations of the commissioners of 1854 which he endeavoured to carry into law, but it failed. For the future, or for as long as the City Police are remarkable for their efficiency, they will be safe from attack. Sir Richard Mayne, of course, resented the existence of a detached police force in the heart of the metropolis, and therefore he wished for its abolition. What would have been more reasonable was the extension of the system. The City, in a word, ought to have annexed the Metropolitan, but as this was impossible whilst the metropolis was without municipal government, the City did the next best thing by defending its position.

Among its most able champions was Mr. Benjamin Scott. In his "*Statistical Vindication of the City of London*," he boldly took up the gauntlet thrown down by Sir Richard Mayne, who, in his letter to Sir George Grey, alleged that to the inefficiency of the police was to be attributed the fact that crime in the City was higher than in the Metropolitan District. This statement was controverted, and the argument that economy would result from amalgamation was shown to be a fallacy.

To-day the police of the City of London constitute a highly efficient body, inferior to no other force in the kingdom. Pay is higher than in the Metropolitan Police, and the stamp of men are frequently superior in intelligence and courtesy. Politeness is the characteristic of the force, from the commissioner, Colonel

Sir James Fraser, K.C.B., and the chief superintendent, Major Henry Smith, to the constable on street duty. The ranks, no doubt, take their cue from the popular superintendent, Mr. A. L. Foster, who for five and twenty years has filled his present position with credit, and even renown. Mr. Foster had a previous experience of seventeen years in the House of Detention, of which he was deputy governor. Mr. Foster's courtesy, politeness, and unvarying attentiveness, have marked influences upon his men, and the result is that it is a pleasure to seek the advice and assistance of the City Police. In Old Jewry, at all events, red-tapeism is not a continual spectre, haunting the official mind. And yet the City Police can keep a secret as closely as may be desirable, without causing the least irritation.

One advantage in their favour is the comparative smallness of the force, and the limited area of their jurisdiction. Mr. Foster has a chief inspector, now Mr. John Egan, whose predecessor was the genial Mr. R. Tilcock, a man whose death was greatly regretted. For forty-one years Mr. Tilcock had served the City. The force now consists of twelve inspectors, two of whom are attached to each of the six divisions. The first division has a station at Moor Lane; the second, at Snow Hill, not far from the celebrated haunt of the Cock Lane ghost; the third, at Bridewell Place; the fourth, at Cloak Lane, Cannon Street; the fifth, at Great Tower Street; and the sixth, at Bishopsgate Street Without.

The station-houses are, generally, commodious and even handsome. The last to be erected was the office in Cloak Lane, off Cannon Street, where Major Smith

has very pleasant apartments. The stations are provided with charge-rooms, muster-rooms, libraries, recreation-rooms, offices, cells, and the usual adjuncts.

Unmarried men are accommodated with lodgings at the stations, for which they have to pay 1s. 6d. per week, which is 6d. more than the Metropolitan scale. It is one of the drawbacks of the City Police that married men have peculiar difficulty in finding suitable rooms. They are supposed to live within the City, but the improvements which have gone on have demolished small properties, and the model dwellings are chiefly outside the City area. At one time a larger proportion of men obtained situations as house-keepers of offices, but owing to the incidence of the inhabited house duty, landlords nowadays prefer to lock up their premises wholly, with the result that there are hundreds of top unoccupied floors which are unlettable as offices, and which might very well be rented to such reliable tenants as policemen would make. An owner, however, cannot be expected to adopt this course when it would bring upon him the liability of paying house duty for the whole of the establishment.

The Corporation have to some extent provided accommodation for married men, and there is a street near Moorgate Street Railway Station let off to about ninety families. About five hundred of the men are married, so that these dwellings are insufficient.

There is a rank in the City Police known as station sergeants, of whom there are fourteen. The station sergeant is frequently in charge of a divisional office, and he wears four yellow stripes on the arm, instead of three. The grade is between the inspector and the

street sergeant. The course of promotion is slow, because old officers cling to their posts. There are 68 sergeants and about 800 constables. The constable may in time become an acting sergeant, then full sergeant, next station sergeant, and finally inspector. The position of inspector differs greatly from the rank of the same name in the Metropolitan force. A City police inspector is in reality a superintendent, having about one hundred and fifty men under his control. All his clerical work is done by the station sergeant, and he has simply to sign the Occurrences Book and other books. On the other hand, the system requires the inspector as well as the station sergeant to be on duty for twenty-four consecutive hours; but this is followed by a clear day's rest, and once a month he gets three unbroken days' leisure. The system has been in operation for many years, and is very popular. It does not appear to overstrain the men, for City inspectors enjoy good health, and have seen many years of service.

We have spoken of the divisional stations. The head-quarters are at 26, Old Jewry, but they are distinguished by no commanding frontage. A constable in the blue uniform and yellow buttons of the City police, with the civic arms upon his helmet, stands at the entrance to a passage-way, or *cul de sac*. There are houses on the two sides and at the end.

Facing you there is the commissioner's office, where may be found comfortable, old-fashioned rooms, communicating by private corridors with the executive branch on the left of the court. Here uniform men are on duty at the inquiry office, muster-room, and



telegraph-room, the wires connecting the system with that of the Metropolitan. Mr. Foster's office is upstairs.

On the other side of the court is the detective department, on the ground-floor being an office in the charge of a sergeant in uniform. It has four or five desks for the accommodation of detective sergeants, and seats for those in waiting. The walls generally exhibit that class of literature peculiar to the police. There is another room, boxed off into compartments, which is used by the detectives, and adorned with the portrait of a former detective, who was shot on board a vessel when conveying a prisoner to London. It is in this room that the little body of men who are assigned the duty of tracing crime assemble. Chief of them all, but immersed in reports and papers of cases under investigation, is Mr. McWilliam. His rooms are on the first floor, and he sits at his modest desk with baskets for documents on his right hand ready for reference. Mr. McWilliam is shrewd, clear-headed, and very courteous.

Mr. McWilliam has been some years in his present post. He is chiefly engaged in the investigation of commercial frauds, and he procured the conviction of notorious Bank of England forgers simply by force of determination, as he stuck manfully to his desk, directing operations, for many months. The dynamite explosions occurring in the district led him on the track of the Irish-American conspiracy ; and the fact that the Mitre Square murder happened within the civic boundaries enabled him to turn his attention to the many peculiar circumstances of the most mysterious sequence of brutalizing crimes, of which this was the sixth.

The City has never been without skilled detectives, and the present men are not unworthy successors of the brothers Forester. Sergeant Ballantine describes them as "neatly dressed personages, somewhat past middle age. They bore a great likeness to one another, although one affected juvenility in a brown wig, the other wearing his own perfectly white hair. Each presented a rosy-faced countenance, and a mild benevolence appeared to beam upon it; they might have been the brothers Cheeryble. They were the celebrated City officers; their hands were never profaned by touching vulgar thieves, and those whom they did touch usually terminated a career of great crime upon the gallows.

"Notwithstanding their occupations, they were really as kindly as they looked. In many a heart-rending scene they had, as far as their duty would allow them, given solace to the afflicted. And their evidence in court was always truthful and unexaggerated."

It seems to be the pride of the City commissioner to introduce points of difference between his men and the Metropolitan. The uniform is brighter, especially in summer, for the winter overcoats hide the distinctive features. Yellow in place of white metal buttons, the red-and-white armlet, the pattern of the helmet, which resembles a fireman's in shape, and the absence of the divisional letter on the collar, distinguish the City Police; and further, in wet weather, they have cloth capes instead of the cumbrous waterproof capes worn by the Metropolitan. On dirty days the civic police also wear gaiters. The inspectors have a smart appearance in uniform.

For the purposes of comparison we give the following scale of pay:—The City Police commissioner receives £2,000 per annum: the chief superintendent, £650; the superintendent of divisions, £357; chief inspector, £213; inspector of detectives, £213; the twelve divisional inspectors, from £3 1s. 6d. to £3 11s. 9d. per week; detective sergeants and station sergeants, £2 11s.; other sergeants, £1 17s. to £2; and constables, from £1 5s. 7d. to £1 12s. 3d., with allowances for boot-money and (to detectives) for plain clothes.

A constable is usually eligible for promotion in four years. It may be noted that there are few Cockneys in the City Police, the reason being that London-born men generally fail to reach the standard height of 5 ft. 9 in. No candidate is admitted under twenty-one years of age.

No member of the City Police is legally entitled to a pension, but such is granted on the recommendation of the commissioner, at the discretion of the Corporation. The funds are provided partly from stoppages of pay, which is not to exceed a fortieth, and partly from fines inflicted on the police, or persons who assault them. The balance is derived from the City cash. There is a movement in progress to obtain the adoption of a limited service pension, so as to provide that a man who leaves the force after having served a certain period shall not forfeit all claim to consideration.

The total expenditure of the City Police is £112,000 per annum, and towards this amount a rate of 5d. in the £ on the assessable rental of the City produces £75,000, whilst £27,000 is paid by the Corporation.

Of course, as we have already indicated, the outlines of police duty, as laid down under the Act of 1839, are in all material respects identical with Peel's plan. Beats, however, are much shorter, averaging ten minutes' duration. There are no mounted patrols, and the force are largely occupied by day, and not so much at night. Regulations as to night duty differ in the several divisions. In some a sergeant has six months' night duty, and then twelve months' day duty; a constable may have twelve months' continuous night duty, followed by two or three years of day duty.

The number of night beats is one-half the total of day-duty beats. The reliefs are the same as in the Metropolitan force. Several City policemen are specially engaged at banks, exchanges, the railway stations, and the Post Office, and their wages are paid by their employers, the amount for private services being £10,000 annually.

One of the coveted positions is the duty of attending the sittings of the Central Criminal Court, which is associated with some little of the sweets of office in the shape of occasional tips from the public desirous of obtaining admission to the Old Court during famous trials.

As for street duty, one can imagine what the responsibility of directing traffic may be in such a centre of convergence as the Mansion House, with its vehicular tide in a chronic state of congestion. The Earl of Rosebery, at a recent New Year's festival of the City Police, drew a picture of one of our ancestors stranded on one side of the kerb at the Mansion House, waiting to cross. What would he do without the friendly intervention of the policemen?

The repairing of the bridges, three of which—London, Southwark, and Blackfriars—are under City Police supervision, invariably results in a crop of collisions. Small additions of 2*s.* 6*d.* to 1*s.* to the ordinary pay are receivable by men regulating the traffic.

Cheapside, with its hawkers of penny “novelties,” and its procession of barrow-men retailing fruit and sweet-stuff, has peculiar characteristics. There are about ninety regular hawkers and forty costermongers. The former, with their baskets, trays, or boxes, stand in the gutter-way, as they are forbidden to loiter on the paths. The police occasionally “move them on,” just to show them that they are under control, and to prevent them from claiming a prescriptive right to a standing; but such interference is seldom, and the same faces may be seen from morning till night, calling their wares at one spot.

Costermongers, a great number of whom are Poles and Italians newly come to this country, have several rounds, besides the Cheapside one. Liverpool Street and Broad Street are monopolized by about sixty “regulars,” who spend eight or nine hours a day in journeying up one side of the road, returning the other, dodging the police whenever they can.

Twice a week at the City Summons Court, an alderman sits to dispose of minor police charges, and contraventions of the traffic regulations engage attention in great measure. Itinerant dealers are, of course, a nuisance to highly rented shop-keepers, and the streets of the City are too narrow to permit of additional obstruction; but there is no desire to be intolerant,

and hence the City Police have to exercise considerable discretion in dealing with offenders.

On special occasions, such as the banquets at the Mansion House, and the still more imposing festivities at the Guildhall, the duty of "parking" the carriages of the guests falls upon the police. At the Jubilee Ball, when nearly 6,000 ladies and gentlemen were invited, it was no easy matter to organize the arrangements so as to permit of each arrival being promptly set down, and of being as promptly sent away again. Guests do not usually arrive at a ball before eight o'clock, and they continue to drive to the door until midnight. The Jubilee Ball of 1887 was particularly illustrious. Eighty-six royal guests honoured the Corporation, and their suites numbered 200. On that occasion, Mr. Tilcock contrived that eight carriages should be dealt with at one time, a semicircular corridor being constructed at the main entrance. At this rate 500 carriages an hour were got rid of, and the moment they were discharged the coachmen had orders to drive to certain streets, the royalties having their places assigned to them, the ambassadors theirs, the aldermen theirs, and so on, down to the conveyances of the humblest councillors.

Necessarily, at such seasons of festivity, there is always a lurking dread that something untoward may happen. Lunatics cannot be expected to behave with common sense, and, further, there are such things as conspiracies. The first of the series of explosions, attempted or otherwise, which alarmed London for two or three years, was detected at the Mansion House, on the evening of May 12, 1882, when, at about nine p.m.,

a canister, wrapped up in brown paper, was discovered attached to the rails by a string. It was of iron, and was filled with powder and rubbish, tightly soldered down. A fuse was thrust through a hole in the lid. A reward of £500 was offered, with no result.

The City, has had its share of dynamite, riot, and popular outburst, to which we devote other chapters.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## RIVER AND DOCKYARD POLICE.

Origin of the Thames Police—The Marine Office (1798)—Ballantine's experiences—Systematic pillage—"Light horsemen"—The Thames Police Office—River police transferred—Minimum of crime—Sewage pollution—"Found drowned"—Run down—The dockyards—Fire drill—Powder Magazine.

THE Thames Police had a different origin to Peel's police, with whom, in course of time, they were amalgamated. For some years, however, they maintained a separate establishment, and even in these days there are points of distinction and of difference. In 1762, an Act dealing with bumboats was passed, but it remained inoperative for fourteen years. A Marine Police Office was authorized in 1798. It had a twofold object—(1) to procure a speedy and regular discharge of West Indian ships by registered and improved "lumpers" under the control of the office; and (2) to protect the property, from the moment the ship arrived at her moorings to the final delivery of the goods at the king's beam, by means of a civil force attached to the police department.

There was a judicial department, where the magistrates presided, for the sole purpose of taking cognizance of offences committed in ships on the river



Thames; and to this department were attached a resident magistrate, two junior clerks, a chief constable, and seven paid constables.

Serjeant Ballantine, in his "Experiences," says: "At the time I was called to the bar, my father was a magistrate, and was residing at the official residence of the Thames Police, then situated at Wapping, on the river bank, opposite to what was called Execution Dock, where, but shortly before, it was the custom to hang pirates in chains. He had for a colleague an old sea captain of the name of Richbell. It was thought, in those days, that the experiences of navigating a ship on the sea would be a good preparation for administering the law in connection with the river. At this office there was a staff of police under the control of the magistrate, and the river was patrolled by this force. I was accustomed to accompany them day and night. They saved my limited resources the expense of cabs; and many is the chase I have joined in of suspicious wherries, and sometimes a scamper, not unattended with danger, upon shore, when the officers were in the performance of their duties. I believe them to be an admirable body of men, joining discipline with much of the knowledge possessed by the old Bow Street runners."

Under the marine police 220 ship constables were substituted for the old watchmen, who were paid by the owners. Thirty quay guards were employed in 1800, the cost of which was defrayed by the West Indian planters and merchants. Their employment ceased when the cargoes under protection of the police were warehoused. The department, having to superintend the discharging of vessels, employed 80 master lumpers

and 820 working lumpers, and the total cost of the police, apart from the wages of the ship constables, was £5,000.

Previous to the adoption of this plan the Thames was without a single police guard-boat, says Colquhoun, and it was the plunder-ground of pirates and incendiaries. Plans of depredation had been systematized, and the rogues had become bold and audacious. From the constant perambulation of boats by day and night, the police having power to seize and apprehend delinquents conveying stolen property, the thieves speedily began to see their danger.

Under the old system, the gangs of lumpers were composed of desperate and suspicious characters, and paid themselves chiefly by plunder; whilst the master lumpers pocketed the chief part of the dues, and it was to their interest to connive at the breaking of casks. Under the new system, the foremen were sworn to prevent pillage. The surveyors, of whom there were four for visiting ships, and five for river duty, regularly visited the vessels under discharge.

Another improvement was the disappearance of the mudlarks, or the grapplers and draggers for old ropes, who at night-time used to hang about the bows and quarters of West Indian ships, where also were to be seen a crowd of watermen's boats, all waiting for the chance of securing plunder. In the old days, the lumpers, each time they went on shore, carried with them large quantities of sugar, ginger, pimento, and other portable articles; and this was independent of plunder to fulfil contracts made by master men and revenue officers, who sent a class of men called "light horsemen," who were hired to pillage a hold, and who

had been known by means of black bags, called "black-strap," each holding one hundred pounds, to carry off two or three tons of sugar each night, besides quantities of rum in bladders.

When the police assumed the direction of affairs, each lighter was loaded under the eye of an officer, and the casks were delivered over to the marine police, under constant surveillance. The police had to keep a sharp look-out for ratcatchers, who put rats into ships in order to make opportunities for theft; and receivers, introduced into vessels by "game," or corrupted, revenue officers. The latter were said to receive £30 to £50 apiece from the plunder of a ship. River depredations had, for the want of proper means to restrain them, increased during the eighteenth century so much that the total loss during that period was estimated at ten millions sterling. It was this wholesale system of robbery that the police had to put down. There were on shore 550 refineries carried on with stolen sugar; and the pirates were also encouraged by receivers of old iron and junk, who were generally armed and equipped in boats, and displayed very great audacity. In fact, everybody stole what they could, and shut their eyes when they saw their neighbours robbing.

The instructions to the river men were these. A marine police surveyor was appointed as a sitter in one of the boats, in which two watermen rowed, and the boats took regular turns in journeying from London Bridge to Blackwall. Two boats were thus constantly occupied. The men were enjoined to be watchful respecting felonies, larcenies, and misdemeanours; they might search bumboats and other craft; they might

apprehend persons damaging rigging; they were to be careful about fires, and were required to assist in securing craft.

Similar directions were issued to the land officers. The police were wont to pay particular attention to the dress of lumpers, in order to ascertain that they had no frocks, nor wide trousers, nor under-waistcoats with pouches. Stolen property was often concealed in the crowns of hats. The police were armed with cutlasses, which, however, were not to be shown, and were only to be used in self-defence.

When the new police were created, the Thames officers were not immediately transferred, but finally the office became a court, the business of which was removed to Arbour Square, Stepney, and the duties of the magistrate became simply judicial; whilst the office at Wapping Old Stairs became the police station, as it now is. Its bow windows overhang the river, and the inspector at his desk can overlook the stream in any direction, whilst he can give an eye to the police boats moored to the stairs.

The Thames division of the Metropolitan Police is the smallest of any. Its strength barely exceeds two hundred men, who are under the local command of a superintendent, aided by a chief inspector, seven divisional inspectors, and forty sub-inspectors; the rank of sergeant being non-existent. There is a wharf, or floating station, at Waterloo Bridge. It was formerly a steamboat pier, and it was converted to its present use when the *Royalist*, an old 16-gun brig, which until 1873 was moored in the river opposite Norfolk Street, Strand, was removed to Blackwall, where it was maintained as the head-

quarters of that division of the Thames Police, in spite of the fact that in 1881 the sanitary committee condemned it as unsuitable. At Erith there is stationed the cutter *Spray*. For the repair of boats a wharf has been secured ; it adjoins the Wapping station. Steam launches are used, but they are very small, and only fit for fine weather and smooth water ; their boilers are unsuited for using salt or brackish water.

Crime upon the river in these days is at a minimum, and most of it occurs in the docks, where the police do no regular duty. Only £144 worth of property was lost during 1887. There are six men attached to the Detective Department. With the exception of the explosion at London Bridge, nothing very sensational has happened of late years ; save, perhaps, the arrest of four men who were charged with murdering a seaman on the high seas. A case requiring much inquiry was that of the theft of seven ivory tusks from a barge in Victoria Dock.

The police are frequently called upon to make inquiries respecting fugitives from the provinces, who are supposed to be going abroad.

Pollution by sewage during hot summers has often affected the health of the men. The traffic of the river has also its dangers. Familiarity with these appears to breed contempt, for, in 1883, Inspector Robson, an old and trustworthy officer, lost his life by being run down by a steam-tug in Woolwich Reach. He was out alone on boat duty.

Every year about one hundred bodies are found in the Thames, and in one-third of the cases the cause of their having come into the water is not accounted for, but there is seldom a suspicion of foul play.

Most of the deaths are suicides, or accidental. More than once, however, the Thames has been used to get rid of mutilated human remains. The police frequently prevent persons from committing suicide, and they rescue drowning persons.

The Thames Police have the carrying out of regulations for maintaining order and securing safety of the public on the river during regattas, matches, and boat-races.

Since the Crimean War, Metropolitan Police have also been stationed at Woolwich, Portsmouth, Devonport, Chatham, and Pembroke dockyards—761 men in all. At Woolwich, there are fire drills, and a police fire brigade is maintained, which is very necessary, as outbreaks have occurred in the Arsenal, in the torpedo factory, and in the Royal College Department. Under the Woolwich division there used to be a small force stationed at Aldershot.

At Portsmouth, the police have the conveyance of naval prisoners, who are over 1,100 in one year, and the apprehension of deserters and stragglers—another one thousand. Breaches of discipline on the part of workmen also engage attention. Fifteen constables are frequently occupied in conducting visitors to the different establishments. A fire brigade is kept up, and its chief duty is to prevent and not to extinguish fires. Under the police system every man is a trained fireman, and hourly keeps the principles of his duty in view. During the Jubilee Naval Review, and on such occasions as the launch of the *Trafalgar*, when 30,000 spectators assembled, the 209 police allotted to the Portsmouth Dockyard had plenty to do.

At Devonport, the police receive, as they do at the other dockyards, the passes for the removal of stores, numbering many thousands in the course of the year. The routine duties are similar to those at other yards. At Devonport, there are special electric and telephonic arrangements to give an alarm of fire. The police fire brigade often gives help in the town.

At Chatham, in addition to such duties as have been already described, a sergeant and thirteen constables have the charge of Chattenden Powder Magazine, where they have a row of well-built cottages outside the grounds, with every accommodation. At Plumstead Marshes, police are also located in comfortable quarters, the military having been withdrawn in 1886. It was at Woolwich that the dynamite discovered at various times in London was received and subsequently destroyed, under the superintendence of the Arsenal chemical authorities.

In all the dockyards, crime chiefly relates to smuggling and to offences against the Public Stores Act.

## CHAPTER IX.

## SCOTLAND YARD AND THE HOME OFFICE.

Scotland Yard—The Home Secretary and his prerogatives—Government control of Metropolitan Police—The position of commissioner—Whitehall Place—The new Central Police Offices—The Receiver's duties—Public Prosecutor and police—Home Office and the provincial police.

ON the left-hand side of Whitehall an archway opens into an ill-paved yard, of irregular shape, and large enough to contain a detached building of two floors and mean architecture, but noticeable because of its isolated position. There is a police office, ill-housed, on the right, two other offices and a row of stables on the left, whilst so much of the remaining space not occupied by two public-houses is taken up by commonplace buildings. At the end of the yard, facing the entrance, the handsome station of the Metropolitan Fire Brigade and the still loftier walls of the neighbouring hotels close in the perspective. This is Great Scotland Yard, as distinguished from Middle Scotland Yard, from which it is separated by Whitehall Place, a broad street formed in 1820, and lined principally by Government offices. Whitehall Place and Great Scotland Yard are for the present the headquarters of the Metropolitan Police.



*The land, which is covered by the heterogeneous collection of outhouses, into which the police system has been thrust, like a hermit crab into a shell which does not belong to it, will soon be cleared. Many years ago it was the site of a magnificent palace, built by the Saxon sovereigns for the reception of the kings of Scotland, when they visited this country. It was enclosed with walls of brick, and it was allowed to fall into decay by Henry VIII. When it was dismantled, its site was made use of by the Government for offices, and John Milton lived in one of them, when serving as Latin secretary to Oliver Cromwell. The names of three famous architects, Inigo Jones, Sir Christopher Wren, and Sir John Vanbrugh, are also associated with the place, each of them having resided hereabouts. Of late years the whole of the surroundings have completely changed, and soon the exact position of the home of the Metropolitan Police for fifty years may be as difficult to indicate as it is for the stranger to determine the spot once dominated by Northumberland House hard by.*

Scotland Yard is conveniently placed to the Home Office.

And now let us say a few words in regard to the office of Home Secretary in its connection with the police of the country at large. We have already explained that by this member of the Ministry, and through him the Government of the day, is retained the right of inspection, in order to ascertain that a proper degree of efficiency is maintained in the forces of England and Wales. The Home Secretary has still higher responsibilities. He receives his seal of office from Her Majesty the Queen, of whom he is the

sole adviser in matters criminal. To a great extent he acts as a court of criminal appeal; upon his initiative a prisoner may be discharged from custody, or he may influence the extension of the royal prerogative of mercy in case of sentence of death. For his guidance, as in fact Mr. Matthews did in the Lipski case, he may reopen the whole inquiry, although not in a public court, and he may reconsider the evidence with any fresh testimony that may be submitted. Lipski, the Jew who murdered his sweetheart in Whitechapel in 1887, had actually commenced to write a confession in Newgate when a respite arrived. It will be remembered what pressure was brought to bear by extraordinary means upon the Home Secretary, a telegram being despatched direct to the Queen, and a petition being numerously signed in the House of Commons. Nevertheless Lipski, when the respite was over, acknowledged his guilt.

It rests with the Home Secretary to recommend remission of sentences, if justice demands such a course, and the payment of compensation, as in the instance of the Edlingham burglary, for which innocent men were wrongfully imprisoned upon alleged fallacious evidence.

Happily the honour and integrity of all Home Secretaries are above question; but there is a marked difference in their legal acumen and aptitude for the management of criminal affairs. Some are quick of perception, and promptly arrive at a right decision; others are slow and hesitating, and become distasteful, which often reflects discredit upon the political party to which they belong. The late Sir Robert Peel was

at one time in disrepute, because he introduced measures which were not approved by the people, though he afterwards, when the wisdom of his plans were tested, regained his former popularity. He was always considered by the police an excellent Secretary of State. The late Sir George Grey was noted for his promptness and decision, and the public as well as the police had confidence in him. Of recent years these politicians have been succeeded by other secretaries who have been equally conscientious and painstaking; but whatever the virtues and great usefulness of any of Her Majesty's advisers may have been, it is generally agreed that none have exceeded Sir R. A. Cross (now Lord Cross) and Sir William Harcourt in gaining the highest estimation of the Government to which they belonged, as well as that of the public and the police. Without doubt Lord Cross was an excellent Home Secretary, for he was at home in his work, and did it, and during his term of office he corrected many abuses. To Sir William Harcourt the police refer in terms of the most profound respect; his unceasing care for the welfare of the juvenile population is too well known to need enlarging upon here, whilst his firmness in all matters must have been the admiration of everyone.

If, after the conviction of a prisoner, any circumstance should come to the knowledge of the police, to cast a doubt on the man's guilt, no time should be lost in communicating the information to the proper authorities, in order that the case may be reinvestigated. Such a course testifies to the integrity of the police, and gives the public confidence that their guardians will as readily exculpate the innocent as they have been diligent to arrest the guilty. The Home Secretary will never

refuse to give both time and attention to any case in the interest of justice. A police officer who knowingly keeps back anything favourable to a person charged, not only acts against the law, and deserves punishment, but brings odium upon the body of which he has shown himself to be an unworthy member.

Between the Home Office and the Metropolitan Police there exists a deeper connection than any of which we have yet spoken. The police of London, much to the dissatisfaction of many, and in spite of some proposals to grant to the metropolis the right enjoyed by lesser cities, still remain under the management of the Home Secretary. The Act of 1829 constituted an office of police, acting under the immediate authority of one of His Majesty's principal Secretaries of State, to control and direct the whole of the new system of police. Two persons were appointed to execute the duties of a justice at this office, which came into existence at Scotland Yard, in a room furnished with a table and a couple of chairs. Ten years later, these justices became commissioners, and in 1856 these two commissioners gave way to one commissioner and two assistant commissioners. A third assistant commissioner was added in 1884.

The Commissioner of Police of the metropolis is appointed by the Crown, on the recommendation of the Cabinet, and he acts under the immediate direction of the Home Secretary. It is, however, unquestionable that the commissioner can make orders and regulations not only for his own affairs, but also for the public convenience. He has certain statutory powers which he can exercise without reference to the Home Secretary. Sir Charles Warren, in his

famous magazine article, which was seized upon as a reason for his resignation, entered very fully into the details of these powers, with which we deal under their proper heads. His object, apparently, was to show that the commissioner was an authority, subject in many points to no higher official, but guided in a great part of his routine work by specific Acts of Parliament.

The attitude of Sir Charles Warren towards Mr. Matthews did not alter the relations between the Home Office and the department of police. As the latter gentleman said, the same practice, the same procedure, the same relations, the same form of communication, the same mode of administration had been followed as were followed from the creation of the police. There had been no modification in the way in which instructions were conveyed, in the submission of proposals, in the manner in which letters were minuted, and ultimately answered and dealt with. The amount of correspondence, and the plans which had to be considered, sanctioned, or reversed, had been, however, extraordinarily great. There was no department of the police which Sir Charles Warren had not been seeking to improve.

According to the late commissioner's own showing, a military man was required to act as a lawyer; for, in 1887, the legal adviser, Mr. Davis, who for thirteen years had given the commissioner the benefit of his experience and knowledge, died suddenly at Whitehall Place, and the post not having been filled up, the greater portion of the work had devolved directly upon the commissioner.

No. 4, and its neighbour, No. 5, Whitehall Place, are merely two of the highly respectable three-storied buildings, formerly private houses, and now utilised as offices. The premises communicate by tortuous passages with the police office in Scotland Yard at the rear, where Mr. Cutbush has charge of the administrative department. He is entirely free of the ordinary routine work of a police station, no charges being taken at Scotland Yard. The messengers and custodians at No. 4 are very polite constables in uniform. Formerly under the same roof the head of the Detective Department had a room. Mr. Monro succeeded to the appointment vacated by Mr. Howard Vincent; but when the dynamite explosion occurred in Scotland Yard, new quarters were rented for the detectives, in Whitehall Place, but across the road, at Nos. 21 and 22, and thither Mr. Monro migrated, to be in turn succeeded by Dr. Anderson. From that time, "Nos. 4 and 5" were left to the Receiver and to the chief commissioner and two of his assistants—one of them, Colonel Pearson, being charged with the administration and discipline of the whole police force, and the other, Mr. Bruce, being responsible for the civil business and matters connected with lands, buildings, stores and provisions, etc. The chief commissioner gets a salary of £1,500 per annum, and his assistants each £1,250.

As for Scotland Yard itself, there is very little left to justify its continued association with police matters. When the new police offices, in course of erection, are completed, they will concentrate the scattered departments, which are now hidden in these rabbit-warrens,

altogether unworthy and undignified. Yet it seems a strange fatality that the site of the future home of the Metropolitan Police should have been tainted with undiscovered crime, in 1888 mutilated portions of a woman's body having been concealed in the cellars. Let us hope that this is not a bad augury.

The site selected is an area of land, 70,000 square feet in extent, a large portion of which was reclaimed from the river by the construction of the Thames Embankment in 1862. It was vendd by the Metropolitan Board of Works in 1875 to Mr. Mapleson, who, with the assistance of Madame Titiens and others, began to build an opera house. About £90,000 was sunk. In 1884, the materials of the partially erected edifice were sold for £3,000. Two years later, negotiations were opened by the Commissioner of Police for the purchase of the land, and ultimately the price was settled. About £200,000 was raised by loan, and the works were started. The new police offices will be accessible from the Embankment, the Metropolitan District Railway, Cannon Row, and Parliament Street, and will therefore be conveniently placed to the Home Office. Several alterations of the plans have been made since the sketch of Mr. R. Norman Shaw, R.A., the architect, was exhibited at Burlington House. The building, particularly in its lower floors, is of the severest architecture, recalling to some extent the massive character of Newgate Prison, of which Mr. Shaw is a great admirer. As the erection attains to its seventh floor, it becomes less simple in style. The granite blocks—2,500 tons in all—used for the under stories were dressed by the convicts at Dartmoor, the superstructure being of brick, with stone dress-

ings. All sides of the building will be of the same character, not excepting the inner quadrangle. The general arrangement of the offices is to group them around this enclosed court. Herein lies the greater part of the architect's work, for accommodation has to be provided for every department of the police. There will be hydraulic lifts at various points. The Convict Office will be at the back, secluded from the rest of the building, and special provision will be made for the privacy of informers, who may enter at one door and take their departure by another and public exit. Licensing offices, the Lost Property Office, accessible from the Embankment, a printing office, tailors' shop where factory-made uniforms are fitted to their wearers, extensive stores at the top of the building, mess-rooms, candidates' examination rooms, chief surgeon's quarters, and surveyor's office, are to be under one roof for the first time. The Receiver of Police will have ample room for his staff, and the commissioner and assistant commissioner are also to be well housed. In fact, no point connected with the administrative control of a standing civilian army nearly thirteen thousand strong has been neglected in the planning of the new police offices, whose noble proportions will cause them to be a not unworthy addition to modern Whitehall.

The Receiver of Police is virtually the paymaster as well as the trustee of the force, for all property of the police is vested in him *ex-officio*. In this connection it may be observed that, under the Local Government Act, 1888, precepts are still to be issued by the commissioner to the overseers of the different parishes



in the district, but the sums hitherto paid by the Exchequer will be raised by the County Councils. They are well secured, as they may be stopped out of the local taxation account.

The Receiver's office is no sinecure. Mr. Pennefather's salary is £1,200 per annum, and he has twelve clerks, one assistant clerk, and occasional writers on his staff, besides a surveyor, assistant surveyor, clerk of the works, professional assessor, storekeepers, five tailors, an inspector of coals, another of candles and soap, and messengers—the salary list totalling over £8,000.

We pass on now to consider briefly the office of Public Prosecutor, or, as it now is termed, the Solicitor to the Treasury. In 1879, after twenty-five years of discussion, a director of public prosecutions was appointed by the Home Secretary to give advice to private prosecutors, justices, magistrates' clerks, and policemen; and, secondly, himself to institute criminal proceedings according to rules to be made by the Attorney-General, with the approval of the Lord Chancellor and the Home Secretary. Since 1884, when the office was abolished, the Solicitor to the Treasury has, excepting in State prosecutions for murder, and others which he undertakes by direction of the Home Office, and subject to certain regulations which were approved by Parliament in 1886, to exercise his own discretion, controlled sometimes by the Attorney-General. Since 1851, the Treasury Solicitor has also been solicitor to the Mint, and still conducts all Mint prosecutions. His other duties do not concern us.

As director of public prosecutions, the Solicitor

to the Treasury necessarily comes into communication with the police of England and Wales, whenever they apply to him for assistance. The department has to get up cases, and in order to do this the witnesses are conducted by the police, if in London, to the Treasury offices, where they are questioned and their statements are reduced to writing.

In regard to the police of England at large, the Home Office, under the Act of 1889, still exercises control, as the power of approval is reserved to it, and if the Secretary of State withholds his certificate on the ground that any force has not been maintained in a proper state of efficiency, then the County Council will not pay over to the Police Committee its share from the Exchequer contribution on account of half the cost of pay and clothing. The effects of the legislation are mainly financial, transferring to the locality the burden which formerly rested upon the Treasury; but economy is provided by the establishment of police districts to equalize general expenditure. Only small borough forces have been affected by the consolidation arrangement with the county police, who are governed by a standing joint committee of quarter sessions and County Council, instead of by the justices simply. In boroughs of over 10,000 population, the Watch Committee still rules, under the Municipal Corporations Act of 1882. The Home Office is represented as heretofore by their district inspectors, and annual tables as to the cost of the forces and the state of crime are compiled as in the past.

## CHAPTER X.

## PROVINCIAL POLICEMEN.

Class of men required—Natural qualifications—Course of training in the provinces—Sworn in—On the beat—Lodgings—The barracks—The sergeant the “backbone of the force”—Duties of an inspector in town and country—Superintendents and their responsibilities—One of the old style—Reporting his superior—Deputy chief constable—Chief constables—Anecdotes—Surgeon of police—A “dead” man in the flue.

THE police service—and here we refer more particularly to the country at large—presents some manifest advantages to induce recruits to enter the ranks. Rates of pay range higher than the average incomes of working men, and it is from the agricultural and labouring classes that policemen are chiefly drawn. Some have followed trades of fluctuating fortune, and some, indeed, are well educated. The wages of policemen are certain and regular; there is no broken time, and clothing is provided. Further, there are no expenses out of pocket; allowances are made for special duty, and there is some provision for old age or disablement. A retired officer can always add to his pension by becoming a caretaker, or filling a position of trust.

The chief recommendations of a candidate are humanity and natural kindness of disposition; when

these qualities are present the presumption is that, with the training that he will receive, the recruit will make an officer worthy to be entrusted with the power placed in his hands. Tact and discrimination are necessary to guide the constable when to make an arrest, for in some cases a summons may serve the ends of justice just as well. Forbearance is necessary to avoid an undue exercise of authority, and firmness of manner will go a long way in preventing a brawl, for a few calm words on the part of the constable will do much to allay the fury of excited disputants. Harsh words and a brutal behaviour, of course, have the contrary effect, and they can only be enforced by violence. A really good constable will be slow to display his physical strength, but rather rely upon his moral influence.

A few years ago, when employment was easily obtained, men required for the police service had to be advertised for, but nowadays, when the labour market is overstocked, unsolicited applications are numerous. Of course they come mostly from the working classes, but, among the exceptions to which we have referred, we can recall the case of a lady of position who desired her son to enter the police as a constable. He did so ; but after a time, however, he went into the army. He would have made a capital chief constable, and might do so yet ; but no military man without police experience should undertake police government.

We propose to apply the observations which follow more particularly to the borough and county police forces of England and Wales. This, then, is the system pursued. A candidate having been selected, his ante-

cedents and connections are strictly inquired into ; he must produce certificates of character, together with the form of recommendation, and he must be able to read and write. He must be up to the standard of height required by the regulations, and undergo an authorized medical examination, in order to ensure that only men of sound health, capable of sustained physical exertion, are admitted. His credentials and medical examination proving satisfactory, he is accepted as a recruit by the chief constable of a county or the Watch Committee or chief constable of a city or borough. The candidate's probation then commences.

For a fortnight or three weeks no uniform is provided. The recruit undergoes a course of drill, and receives instruction. If considered fit for the service, the novice is taken before a magistrate or justices and sworn in.

It is now for the first time that he is dressed in full uniform, and becomes a recognized member of the force. In a county, he probably remains for some time at head-quarters, or is drafted to a division or section, and placed under the immediate observation of a superintendent or inspector. If in a short time he displays aptitude for his work, favourable reports are sent to the chief constable, who directs that he shall take charge of a beat in a place, if in a county, consisting of a number of small villages, the population of the whole of which, perhaps, does not exceed 1,300.

In cities or towns in whose forces may usually be found a number of young and unmarried men, a building is set apart for their accommodation, called the police barracks. An officer and his wife in many

instances have charge. Sometimes an old pensioned officer fills the position. Frequently the men appoint weekly a mess-master, who directs the commissariat, and buys the food for the week, each constable paying an equal share on settling-day. This method gives each man an opportunity of introducing at intervals any article of diet that he may fancy, and secures variety.

The influences of residence in barracks are good ; the men have the advantage of home association with each other, comfortable separate beds, clean and well-warmed apartments, and properly cooked food. They have reading, smoking, and recreation rooms, and a good dining-room ; and can, at their pleasure, retire from or seek the society of their companions—in short, enjoy all the privileges of a well-regulated private home.

Where there are no barracks, or if the constable has a home of his own, he resides with his family, and the single men either lodge with a brother officer or find convenient apartments.

In some towns, schoolmasters are appointed to give instruction in reading, writing, and arithmetic. There are men in the police who, on appointment, were very moderately educated, but who gladly availed themselves of the opportunity for improvement. They have made themselves fair shorthand writers, and are able to read and write French and German. These men are competent to fill the highest posts. This is "how policemen are made ;" and it is, as a rule, from these materials we draw our sergeants, inspectors, and superintendents.

Under no circumstances is it desirable that an

officer should be "made" unless he has gone through all grades of the service. The sergeant of the police force, as in the army, may be considered the backbone of the service. In country districts he frequently occupies a police station, has charge of the cells, and is responsible for the safe keeping of all prisoners. His district is called a section, and he will have under his command six or eight constables, and be responsible for the direct supervision of their duty. Not only does he patrol on his own account, but he visits the constables on their beats and at given "points" known only to the police. The sergeant receives all reports from his constables, and transmits them to his inspector. He keeps a journal in which he enters all occurrences, conferences with his men; in fact, he makes note of everything that has reference to his duty.

The sergeant in country districts fully instructs his constables, and assures himself that they understand and are attentive to their duty; he watches carefully that the constables keep their clothing and accoutrements in good order, and that they maintain a clean and trim appearance.

In towns, the sergeant of police takes alternate night and day duty. He is responsible for the good conduct of the constables of his section, the maintenance of order, and the safety of his district; frequently visiting his men, making note of and reporting to his inspector any occurrence that may demand attention. He is supposed occasionally to patrol with constables and give them instruction to fit them for their various duties.

It is impossible altogether to prevent crime occurring on a constable's beat, but the less that takes

place, or is reported, the more likely it is to be believed that the officers and men do their duty well. Where robberies are frequent and broils numerous, the presumption is that the police are inactive. This state of things is attributed justly to the supineness of the sergeant. Whenever an officer becomes less diligent in the performance of his own duties, the effect is seen in the laxity of the men under his command.

Before a man is promoted to the rank of sergeant, he has to show himself able, not only to drill well himself, but also to drill the other men. All officers, beginning with the sergeants, in counties, cities, and boroughs, should be accustomed both to ride and drive, and to manage and keep perfect command of their horses. In country districts, it frequently happens that the sergeant is called upon to mount; whilst in towns, it is common for all officers of every grade, not excepting the chief constable, in times of large gatherings of people, on any political or civic occasion, to be mounted in order to keep the thoroughfares clear, and to prevent undue or dangerous pressure amongst the crowd. In these arrangements of duty the sergeant is noticed, and his attention to them is well approved by those who are observing. And it is upon these recommendations that he is in the first instance appointed as an acting inspector.

The duties of an inspector of police increase in responsibility. It can be seen at a glance, on visiting a well-regulated police establishment, where an inspector is present, that he is looked upon as a guide, guardian, and referee by those whose unpleasant business causes them to seek police aid. In contrast with bygone days, the inspector must be a man of education,



and capable judgment; the public must feel a firm reliance in him as such. In country districts, he usually takes charge of a division or subdivision comprising sections, and has one or more sergeants under him. Living, as a rule, at a police station, he has charge of cells where offenders are confined for safe keeping until they are examined or tried by the justices in petty sessions.

A court is usually built in proximity to the station, and the inspector is seen on court days attending to all the summonses and warrants served and executed by the men under his command; he has to take care there is no hitch in the court's proceedings. After the business of the day is over, it is satisfactory to be sure that every case brought forward by the police has been stated fairly and impartially. "Nothing extenuate, or ought set down in malice," is a very good rule of conduct. The inspector sees that the whole proceedings at the court are duly registered, and it is from the books kept by the police that the Government tables are made out and the exact state of crime of the nation ascertained. An inspector is frequently appointed an inspector of weights and measures, and assistant relieving-officer for vagrants; and he attends to and supervises all common lodging-houses in his district, reports on the state of highways and county bridges, and infectious diseases amongst cattle, giving immediate warning to his superintendent and the magistrates of his district of any outbreak.

A horse and conveyance in some parts are provided for an inspector, that he may more readily visit his district in any part, and exercise a close supervision over his sergeants and constables. He is supposed

to be well acquainted with all that transpires in that portion of the county entrusted to his charge. His office is no sinecure. In a country district, he is supposed to be always ready for a call, night or day; the pay he receives is well earned, and in nineteen cases out of every twenty the public are well satisfied.

In towns, the duties of the inspectors vary. For instance, one has the control of hackney carriages; another, the supervision of returned convicts and supervisee; a third is occupied with common lodging-houses; whilst a fourth has the public-house and beer-house department to attend to. The work of these officers is entirely independent, and they are not in any way concerned in the patrolling of the streets and in visiting constables, although they are bound, if necessity demands, to assist in any part of the town in which they may happen to be.

In addition to these officers, there are, according to the size of the town, a number of patrolling inspectors. At the various stations they read over all reports and occurrences to sergeants and constables going on duty; they visit and receive reports from the sergeants and men of their several divisions, and see that all property is carefully watched and guarded during their hours of duty, which are alternate night and day. Having proved himself perfect in the duties of an inspector, the police officer is considered eligible to become a superintendent.

The superintendent is the one great binding link in the police system, inasmuch as all officers under his authority are accountable to him for their own conduct as well as that of the constables. All policemen

cannot possibly reach the highest grade, though each man should endeavour to fit himself for it. A superintendent has a pretty firm hold of his appointment. In counties, as well as in large towns, he is sometimes transferred from one division to another, as the exigencies of the service require. Unless by some mistake of his own he is reduced, he occasionally may rise to the post of chief constable ; but, as a rule, the superintendents do not apply for these prizes of the service ; they rest contented with the comforts and respectability of the position they have attained, and work on until they are justly entitled to a well-earned pension. Their love for the service, matured through many years, usually induces them to hold on to the verge of their physical disability.

Always keeping in view the primary object of a police force, "the prevention and detection of crime," the superintendent has many responsibilities. For instance, he is appointed an inspector of weights and measures, of common lodging-houses, of gunpowder, petroleum, and all explosives, of hackney carriages, of food and drugs, besides being sometimes captain of fire brigade, assistant relieving-officer, and at times he has to see the Infant Life Protection Act is duly carried out. This work is in addition to keeping the machinery of a division in good working order, and it entails a large expenditure of time and labour. The superintendent personally attends agricultural shows, flower *fêtes*, contests of skill, exhibitions, race meetings, and all large public gatherings in his division, his presence inciting his men to perform their duty with diligence, courtesy, and firmness. He keeps a record of all returned convicts and persons under police

supervision, and also of descriptions of criminals and suspected persons at large within his jurisdiction.

In large towns, the duties are very similar to those in the country, only the acreage is smaller, the population larger and more concentrated, the subordinate officers are more frequently interviewed, the work much heavier and more constant. Telegraphs and telephones are now attached to all stations in large towns, so that intelligence can be promptly conveyed to every part.

Of late years there has been a marked improvement in the education of the superintendents of the police. A superintendent of the olden time comes to the writer's recollection. This officer was considered by the lower classes to be a man of education and of great propriety, and he was looked up to as a guide. He was accustomed to give advice on points of law, how to proceed and how to get out of a difficulty. As his hand had a peculiar trick of finding its way behind his back and suddenly closing, probably it was accustomed to feel something in the palm. At all events, he was a well-to-do man, and kept horses, cows, and pigs, and on market days he was always found trading. He was a little over fifty years of age, rotund, and when standing at attention he could not see his feet, and had not done so for years. He had a short thick neck, bullet head, low brow, fox terrier eyes, rubicund nose, ruddy complexion, and light brown mop-like hair. In uniform, he wore a tall hat, coat of the prescribed pattern, and brown cloth trousers, and in his hand, as he stood on the right of the front rank—although it was a fine day when first the writer saw him thus “got up”—he carried a “mush” umbrella, tied up lettuce fashion.

We may quote verbatim from the report of a superintendent of equally inferior education of the period :—

“Superintendent ——— Reportes that he wear pasing up ——— Street near sant John’s Church at 2.30 a.m. when he herd ha Chamber Window open in the West Row and a Female Voice call Police he Ran to the Place & wear met near the corner by Super ——— who acompanied him to the Call & found that it wear at the house of ——— the two Girls Reported that they wear some one in the house the Girls by request came down stairs & opened the Front Door when the officers went hin and surched Every Room both up stars & down Cupboards, Pantey’s &c. but all the outer Doors wear Fast & no wan to be found or aney trace of aney one whose having been in. The Family is away & the Girls war afraid the House under goin Cleaning down.”

Here is another entry which indicates the state of the discipline of the superintendent’s men :—

“Supt. ——— Reportes Sergeant ——— for tirney at Drill by Placing the Superintendent at the Right of the Rank the other officers at the Left, & Left Wheeling the whole Round the Shed & when he saw that the Superintendent could not get up Shouted Hout at the top of is voice to close up the Superintendent ast him what he wear shouting ‘at when he ‘commencet with Large language & hordered the Superintendent to Fall out ——— this i complane of most Bitterly to dodge about with a Sergeant.”

Then follows the memorandum :—

“Sergeant ——— reports Superintendent ——— for disobeying orders at drill on this date.”

In counties, a superintendent of a division is appointed deputy chief constable. This officer, in nearly all instances, resides at head-quarters, and has charge of the home division. He is recommended by his chief constable to the court of quarter sessions, and his appointment is there confirmed. This procedure is according to statute, and when the chief constable is absent from the county, the duties and responsibilities devolve upon the deputy. Matters of grave importance are left in abeyance until the chief constable can be communicated with, or returns to resume personal command.

In 1839 and 1840, Acts, as we have said, were passed, providing for the appointment of a county constabulary, organized and maintained in accordance with rules prescribed by the Secretary of State. In due course, several counties organized their police forces, and as a rule appointed military men to the command. Policemen being new to their work and having all to learn, the public, for a time, felt the irksomeness of their arbitrary rulings, and looked upon them in the light of oppressors and obnoxious intruders. As the *morale* and cultivation of the forces improved by training, the public began to regard them with more confidence, and looked upon them as the real protectors for which they were intended. It was not until 1856 that an Act of Parliament rendered it compulsory on the magistrates of every county—where a police force had not yet been established—to proceed forthwith with its formation.

Chief constables were first appointed, and the very onerous duty devolved on them of selecting and organizing these primitive forces. Many men in

those days stayed in the ranks but a very short time ; discipline had to be strict, and only those who on trial showed capacity remained in the service. The chief *constables were all men of family position and unflinching integrity.*

An immense responsibility rests on the shoulders of a chief constable for a county. He selects, appoints, promotes, removes, reduces, fines, and dismisses his men without reference to any other person ; he stands between the public and his force, and whilst he protects his men on the one hand, he sees that they properly perform their duty to the public, whose servants they really are. One of the earlier specimens of chief constables used to be spoken of by his men as severe and undignified. Occasionally he had the whole force at head-quarters for drill, and would speak in rough coarse terms to officers in presence of the constables ; he would keep superintendents at drill after the others had been dismissed, and very grotesque they looked in the police dress of the period, wearing belts like those used for brewers' dray-horses. On one occasion this officer addressed them as follows :—

“ I have been narrowly watching you go through your drill, and in all my experience I never saw a more disgraceful exhibition in the whole course of my life. You are about the ugliest, clumsiest, and dirtiest lot of fellows there are in the county. Now that I have you all together, I am surprised at myself for having chosen such a set to have charge of divisions. Sergeant, keep on with drill.”

At this juncture he went out, and in a short time returned, wearing a different aspect. The officers were still drilling, and he was heard to call out, “ Hear,

hear! Very well done indeed!" He halted the superintendents himself, and thus spoke to them :

"Gentlemen, you are a very smart body of men indeed; you have gone through your movements admirably, your conduct deserves the highest commendation. I am just going to have luncheon, and invite you all to join me."

They did join him at luncheon, but not one of them could feel comfortable or have any real respect for their host, though policy secured their presence at his table.

On one occasion, this man fined a superintendent, for not having the collar of his uniform coat properly hooked, the sum of 10s., which he ordered him to deduct from his own pay, and send to head-quarters. He would listen to no explanation. The superintendent at the time could not by any possibility fasten his coat, as he was suffering from carbuncle on the neck; but he forwarded the 10s. with an explanation. To mend matters, his chief fined him an additional 5s. for not reporting his ailment in the first instance. To go further, he once fined another superintendent 10s. for entering in his journal that on a certain date he discovered a piece of whin on fire, and for not reporting the same to head-quarters at the time. The superintendent tried to explain that the fire was of such small dimensions that he did not consider it worth a report, but contented himself by making a note of it in his journal. The major's answer was that, if it was not worth reporting, it was not worth noting. The fine had to stand. Acts like these destroyed all personal respect, and fostered much duplicity. Fortunately, heads of police like this individual are rarely to be met with.



A surgeon to a police force is usually a man of marked ability, skilful in making post-mortems, and of quick discernment. In all cities, large towns, and boroughs, a surgeon is appointed by the corporation to examine and pass recruits for the police service, to attend to them during sickness, or when suffering from injury ; and he is customarily employed by the coroner when suspicious circumstances demand medical investigation. If persons confined in the police cells are discovered to be ailing, he is summoned to attend them. In cases of brutal assaults on women and children, or violent assaults upon adults, he is called upon to investigate the extent of their injuries, and to give evidence before the magistrates. In fact, whenever medical assistance is required in a police establishment, the surgeon is applied to. His integrity and skill must be beyond suspicion, and, to the honour of the medical profession, it is a rare thing to meet with a man of contrary character.

It is upon a surgeon's testimony that a life frequently hangs ; he has to decide if it is possible or impossible for certain injuries to have been self-inflicted. The surgeon is looked upon by the force as a friend, and rarely does he discharge his duties in a careless or unkind way. Exceptions to the rule of certainty on a doctor's part will sometimes occur in ordinary cases, but never, to the writer's knowledge, in any matter affecting the life or liberty of a person accused.

The following incident, in this connection, may be related. A man was found hanging by the neck from a beam in a malt-kiln, and he was supposed to have committed suicide. The body was cut down, a

crowd assembled, the surgeon arrived, and, after a very superficial examination, pronounced the man to be dead. The place was cleared by the police, the door locked, and a stretcher ordered, that the body might be conveyed to the mortuary. But when the door was opened the "bird had flown." It was some time before he was traced, for he was hiding up a flue in another part of the building. He was pulled down by the legs and taken on a stretcher to the police station.

In the metropolis, counties, and large towns, there is a body of men over and above the recognized or authorized strength of the police establishment, and these are called the reserve force. The men are drafted to different parts, as the exigencies of the service demand, and when a number of them are required at a given point, they are immediately summoned together. At all large gatherings, such as race meetings, agricultural shows, sports, and exhibitions, and in times of popular ferment, the reserve force is requisitioned.

## CHAPTER XI.

*PAGES FROM MY DIARY.*

Desperate burglar—A struggle with a convict—An exciting chase—Tom Sayers and the police—The battle with Heenan—John Leech at Whitby—"Found drowned"—Tender memories—"Marks"—A contract of separation—The cells—"Wolf Holds"—Naughty boys—In court—"Kiss the book"—A provincial police station—An arbitrator—Scenes before the inspector's desk—Lost little one—The maternal instinct.

TO the records of bare facts which have preceded this chapter, we may now add a few scenes which have the merit of being true narratives told in the first person, to indicate the varied nature of a policeman's experiences.

On one occasion, whilst on the beat, I recognized from a description a man "wanted" for a burglary of silver. He was standing near a landing stage on the river Tees. I approached and put my hand upon him, at the same time saying, "In the name of the Queen, I arrest you for burglary." In an instant, he sprang into the river, and commenced to swim to the opposite side. Not taking time to divest myself of any portion of uniform, I plunged in after him, and overtook him. Had it not been for the prompt assistance of a ferry-boatman, doubtless we should

have both been drowned, for he was a desperate man. He was properly secured, the stolen silver was all recovered, and the burglar was committed for trial, convicted, and sent into penal servitude.

Between eleven and twelve o'clock at night, about twenty-five years ago, I noticed a man carrying a good-sized bundle along the side of the quay in a seaport town. He was a person well known to me—a returned convict. The late hour of the night, coupled with the man's character, caused me without more ado to seize him and remove him from the quay side, to prevent his throwing the bundle into the river. I asked, "What have you got here?" "Nothing much!" he replied; but, on feeling the bundle and finding it contained miscellaneous articles, I judged he had been robbing vessels. I arrested him and took him to the police office, and whilst I was opening a door with one hand, holding the prisoner with the other, the bundle being under my arm, he placed one leg behind me, threw me off my feet over a balcony into a yard below, a distance of thirteen or fourteen feet, and I fell on my head and shoulder. The man jumped over a side wall and made his escape. I was injured, but had strength and determination to follow him and secure him again if possible. He ran along a street level with the quay, until he came to a yard called the "dark entry," into which he slipped and laid himself across the gateway. I followed at full speed, and in the dark fell over him. He bolted out again into the street, "wily as a fox." He had no doubt calculated that a second fall would quite disable me, instead of which it put me on my mettle still further to apprehend him at all risks. Following in pursuit, I

overtook him, knocked him down, and secured him. Twisting my hand in his neckcloth, I turned towards the police station, where assistance was at hand. I was bleeding and very much exhausted when taken home. The doctor was sent for, and my head was probed to see if there was any injury to the skull, but it was only a scalp wound. The prisoner was sent for trial, and sentenced to fourteen years' penal servitude.

In my earlier police life I was on the beat in London, in Cockspur Street, near the Haymarket. One night a broil took place amongst some coachmen and grooms, in which I interfered, and was getting roughly handled, when a person well known to me stepped up and took my part. He said, "I am going to stand by the policeman," and let fly with his fists at one or two of my assailants. They did not seem to relish his handiwork, and the affray quietly ended.

*This friend-in-need was no other than the late Tom Sayers, England's greatest champion pugilist. He called upon me on one occasion at King Street Police Station, Westminster, and remained in the library until I dressed in plain clothes to have an evening out. We went to the Jane Shore, Shore-ditch, kept then by Harry Orme. It was a benefit night on behalf of some old sportsman's widow and children. On our way home we were coming along Old Street, City Road. A constable was in trouble, several roughs having attacked him. Sayers, always ready to assist the police, went to the rescue, together with myself, and he dealt his telling blows right and left. The officer had a prisoner in charge. He got his man quietly away to the station after that.*

The day after Sayers fought Heenan, I was stand-

ing in uniform at the entrance to the Grand Stand at Epsom. The little champion came up and held out his left hand ; his right was resting in a patent-leather sling.

"Good morning," he remarked. I answered, "How do you feel? Is your arm broken?" "I feel well enough," he replied. "My arm is worse than broken ; the ligaments are all knocked out of their places." He scarcely had a mark about him. This man was, without exception, the best-tempered, quietest, and best-behaved man of his class I ever knew in my life. It was a pity he had not some more worthy employment than prize-fighting. His colours were the royal arms of England, which he always wore when engaged in a contest.

In September, 1864, I first became acquainted with the late Mr. John Leech. I was located in the quaint and picturesque town of Whitby. One day a note came to the police station, requesting the chief officer to go or send to a certain lodging-house in the Royal Crescent, West Cliff. Dressed in the uniform of the period—leather-topped tall hat, huge belt, and long frock uniform coat—I was ushered into the presence of a lady and gentleman with their children. I stood at "attention." The gentleman thus addressed me : "You are a police officer, I presume? I do not know if you have heard of me ; I am simply an artist, and have come down here from London for rest and recreation. My name is Leech. I am very much annoyed at some dogs."

At this juncture his wife interposed. "My dear, the officer is standing."

"I beg your pardon," said Mr. Leech ; "pray be

seated." I took a chair, placed my tall hat on the floor, and gave my attention, and he resumed, "There is a small female dog that is constantly running before my windows, with a number of male dogs in company." He added, with a smile, "I do not ask you to arrest the dog, but will you try to remove the nuisance?" I replied that I would try to do as he wished, and took my departure.

Next day, a note came—"Will Mr. Clarkson kindly call upon Mr. Leech this evening at seven o'clock?" This time I went in plain clothes, and afterwards passed many an agreeable hour with the talented but nervously prostrated caricaturist.

When on the beat, I was visiting a small station at a miniature seaport town, called Robin Hood's Bay, in a storm, and a vessel had been totally wrecked and all hands lost. A body was washed ashore, denuded of all clothing except a vest and a flannel shirt. I saw them removed, and around the neck of the corpse was suspended an amulet of the Roman Catholic Church. On searching the pockets of the vest, I found a name and address on the leaf of a small pocket-book. The body was that of a Frenchman, the captain of the vessel, and had been much bruised against the rocks. I telegraphed immediately to Havre, and received a reply, "Friends coming." An inquest was opened and adjourned. The body was photographed, and when the friends arrived it was buried in that pretty, elevated, and lonely churchyard, overlooking the sea, the resting-place of many mariners, masters of ships and crews. It is now closed, but the grave of this foreigner is marked by a small, yet handsome marble tombstone, placed there by his friends.

The officer on the beat who has had any length of service could relate numerous reminiscences. Amongst minor things, he could speak of many arrangements made by the sergeants in the shape of tell-tale marks, placed by them to ascertain if he had done his duty properly. Whilst this is done to test the constable, he in his turn has contrived marks to see that the burglar has not in his absence attempted to enter warehouses, etc. These marks are numerous, and are frequently changed. It is sufficient to say that when a thief is arrested after his domiciliary or nocturnal visits, he is frequently found to have attached to his clothing small pieces of worsted stuck with bird-lime. The worsted can be identified. How has it got there? The police know. It is not to be supposed that burglars are ignorant of these devices. Once a thief was caught with a bagful of pieces of cotton, bits of whalebone, and other such materials which are customarily employed; hence some ingenuity is required in the novel adjustment of the policeman's mark, or it will be seen, and, if perceived, it of course becomes useless.

I recollect, when on duty in the police office, a husband and wife whose oft-repeated differences culminated in a mutual determination to have a divorce. They came to the police office to enter into this solemn contract of separation. The officer, knowing the best way to promote peace between the twain was to fall in with their wish, drew up a document beginning with "We, the undersigned," etc. Both signed it, thanked the officer, shook hands, bade each other farewell, and separated at the station door, one going along one street, the other another—the man singing, "We never speak as we pass by." The officer's expectations of



reunion were realized, for he found them shortly afterwards in a public-house, drinking out of the same pint mug, all their differences settled. This is ridiculous, but perfectly true.

Now we come to a darker side of a police office—the cells, which were formerly comfortless dungeons, damp, ill-lighted, unventilated, noisome. Not the least of the evils endured by the unhappy persons thrust into them were the frequent visits of rats, a great terror to many. This is altered now ; a more enlightened code provides that the cells shall be warm, clean, and well ventilated, lined with glazed white brick, frequently washed, and incapable of harbouring vermin, whilst the treatment of prisoners is humane, in contrast with the harshness of former days. It would be unjustifiable in the present era to place mere vice and serious crime on a level ; but, for all that, each offender has a right to proper treatment before trial, inasmuch as police cells are not intended for punishment, but for safe keeping only. However careful an officer in charge of the cells may be, unavoidably there are occurrences which no amount of foresight on his part could possibly prevent. Men have been brought in and locked up apparently drunk, and before medical assistance could be obtained, have died of heart disease ; others, unsuspected of any intention to commit suicide, have put an end to their existence. It is anything but pleasant to be an officer in charge of cells when there is a number of drunken prisoners confined. It is a Babel of sounds. Some men are swearing, singing, dancing, knocking, or making noisy appeals for liberty ; whilst others are in fits, others are suffering from delirium tremens, and

others are snoring fast asleep like pigs. Sometimes the cell windows are instantly smashed, and any damage is done that a drunken mind can suggest. Worn out by racket and noise, one by one the prisoners yield to the influence of sleep, or the doctor may have to inject morphia to compose the nerves of the sufferer from delirium tremens, and save him from what otherwise might ensue—madness or death.

Not long ago, an inebriate, after having had a short sleep, and when all was silent, suddenly sprang from his bed, and, in a stentorian voice, sang a portion of the "Wolf Holds," "Locks, bolts, and bars," etc.—a composition not inappropriate to his condition.

Prisoners are supplied, before going to answer charges preferred against them, with good hot coffee or tea and butter and bread. The coffee and tea are always thankfully received ; the bread is often refused. When young boys find that their misdeeds have brought them into a police cell, their cries for "mother," and entreaties to be let out, are piteous. It is a mistake to lock up a young boy if it can any way be avoided. If very unmanageable, it is all very well to frighten him with the threat of imprisonment, but actually to affix the stigma should not be permitted until all milder measures have failed.

In country places the bench is composed of county justices, in some cities and boroughs borough justices preside, whilst in others a stipendiary magistrate is employed to administer justice. At the metropolitan police courts a stipendary always sits, who is usually styled "the beak" by the lower orders. Although the dignity of the court is strenuously upheld by the officers, the absurdities of prisoners cannot always be suppressed.

As a rule, night charges are taken first, so that policemen performing night duty can get back to their quarters or homes with as little delay as possible. In a certain district a constable did little else besides attending to prisoners, calling cases in court, and swearing the witnesses. He had an idea that were he not present the whole proceedings would be at a standstill. When he administered the oath, he quickly ran word into word, without pause, loudly emphasizing the last words. Presenting the book to the witness, he cried, "Take that book in your right hand and listen to me. 'The—evidence—you—shall—give—to—the—court—shall—be—the—truth—the—whole—truth—and—nothing—but—the—truth—so—help—you—God.' Kiss—the—book—look—this—way—and—speak—up." Here our accomplished crier sat down as if he had done the major portion of the work of the court, pulled out of his glazed topped hat a snuff-coloured pocket-handkerchief, rubbed his head round with it two or three times, then applied it sonorously to his nose, and jerked it back into its usual receptacle with all the animation of a round-arm bowler. Although this officer died many years ago, his memory will not speedily be forgotten in the district.

Let us now glance round one of our modern provincial police stations. Entering the door at which many a culprit has been "run in," we find ourselves in a large outer office, provided with a counter and desk for the constable on duty, and a compartment for the sergeant in charge. Upon the walls may be found some interesting bills detailing how this or that individual, with features of some special cast, hair of par-

ticular colour, and a figure so many feet and inches in height, is "wanted" by the authorities of some town or district. The ancient custom of requesting Her Majesty's lieges or officers to produce these persons "alive or dead" has passed away, and nowadays it is the criminal in what Yorkshire people call a "quick" condition who is in demand. Strange and curious are some of the descriptions of these "waifs and strays."

We pass along to the inspector's office. Here we find him, if not patrolling the streets, sitting at his desk arranging duty and attending to special correspondence. In this department there is a safe, in which money, books, and stolen valuables are deposited. There is a rack in which cutlasses are displayed and kept ready for instant use.

Entering the detectives' room, we find ourselves in a "portrait gallery." Were the fate of Pompeii to overtake this country, the antiquarians of the future would be puzzled to know why the originals of these likenesses had been singled out for the honour of public portraiture. Some forty or fifty typical faces are presented for study. A few of the faces have a decidedly respectable look, and one or two an appearance of innocence and simplicity which might deceive the oldest hand. The "ladies" in the group are not, generally speaking, of the ministering angel class, but are better-looking than might be expected. This circumstance is accounted for by the fact that the lowest type of female criminal, the drunken viragoes, the belligerent, blaspheming, unsexed terrors of the slums, get their fourteen to sixty days' imprisonment, and return, after being washed, to their wallowing in the mire. Their features being well known, there is no

need to have their photographs on the walls of the detectives' sanctum.

The smarter, but quite as dangerous criminal, the female pickpocket, who is in London to-day and in Liverpool to-morrow, however, enjoys the doubtful honour and distinction of admission to the "portrait galleries" of the police. We must, however, hasten from this unexpected home of the "fine arts" to the police library; which, as might be supposed, is not a selection of volumes of the "Newgate Calendar," or other such records of crime. On the contrary, it is a collection of well-chosen and entertaining books for the use of the men. It is a good thing to promote the intelligence of the police in this way; for are they not asked for advice and assistance in all sorts of difficulties—such as domestic quarrels; disputes between lodging-house keepers and lodgers; contumacious conduct of public-house customers; misunderstandings about purchases at little shops, where the slate serves as day-book and ledger; midnight brawls, and real or supposed thefts; not to mention broken windows, naughty boys, disobedient servants, lost children, starving tramps, and people in fits? All these, and not a few other troubles and trials of our complicated civilization, require the attention of the police and the exercise of their judgment.

One soon learns how the bully of the streets shrinks into a coward after crossing the threshold of the police office. Offensively boisterous and braggart before the policeman's hand has been laid on his shoulder, he becomes as offensively humble, and whines like a whipped school-boy on passing the *via Dolorosa* between the desk, where his name has been

entered in the charge sheet, and the adjoining cells. More pleasing traits of character may, it is only just to add, be observed occasionally among the "world's poor routed leavings," as Matthew Arnold called them. Here, for instance, is a scene with a certain pathetic element in it, mingled with a slight dash of the grotesque. A lost child has been found by a big, kind-hearted policeman ; the little thing has nothing to fear from its new protectors, but it refuses to be comforted. It screams and wails and sobs in turn, as if its little heart would break, and the policemen gather round it exerting their ingenuity in attempts to make it feel at home. One suggests a bun, and a bun large enough to satisfy a hungry plough-boy is speedily procured ; but babies, like men, cannot live by bread alone, and it is the mother the child wants, and not the satisfaction of its hunger or thirst. A practical illustration is now given of the old truth that "wisdom is better than strength," for, remembering that in the cells behind there are two of the frail daughters of Eve, who were rampagious enough the night before, but are now quiet as lambs, a policeman runs to gain their help, and it is needless to say that this is not refused. They appear on the scene, certainly not fair to look upon, but in such a crisis a black eye more or less is no great matter. With a woman's nursing instinct, they set to work and act the mother's part to the little exile, and speedily its arms are round the neck of one of them, while the other leads the way in triumph to the cells, where the child, now quieted and at rest, stays with them till its natural protector appears excited and breathless on the scene. As Artemus Ward said, "There is a great deal of human nature in most people."

## CHAPTER XII.

## HOW THE QUEEN IS PROTECTED.

Her Majesty's alarms and escapes—Superintendent Hayes arrests Roderick Maclean at Windsor in 1882—Method of police salute—The Jubilee ceremonials—Police and public—The opinion of the late Emperor of Germany—Ambulance duties—Supposed infernal machine at Windsor—Fishing-rods and horse medicine.

ONE of the most anxious duties which devolve upon the police is that of protecting the life of Her Majesty the Queen and the lives of the royal family. The English, happily, are a loyal people, but we are not without our lunatics; and it is precisely this class who are to be feared the most, as they do not act according to rule. Unfortunately the Queen, during her half-century of reign, has had abundant reason for desiring that her movements in public shall be as private as possible. Nowadays, in most of her journeyings, save where affairs of State require Her Majesty to run the risk of assault, the Queen is usually shielded to the utmost extent from the possibility of harm. To such an extent is this privacy respected, that at wayside stations no loiterers are permitted to gather, and frequently the whole line of communication is under police surveillance. When Her Majesty met

the widowed Empress Frederick at Port Victoria in November, 1888, by express instructions of the Home Office the most careful precautions were taken for the watching of the route, although in parts it traversed a country where there is a sparse population. This order appears to have had its origin in the fact that, a few days previously, an accident to the royal train on its way from Scotland to Windsor was narrowly averted ; a block of timber having been found on the metals not long before the train was due. This obstacle was at first supposed to have been maliciously placed to upset the engine, but it was subsequently stated to have been dropped from a preceding train.

Her Majesty can recall several escapes which warrant some degree of nervousness on her part, although she has never, it must be said, manifested personal alarm. Still the police are fain to confess that they are relieved when State ceremonies pass without an addition to the already long list of attempts upon her life which the Queen has suffered. The first of these, it will be remembered, was by Oxford, in June, 1840, and the last was on March 2, 1882, when Roderick Maclean shot at Her Majesty at Windsor railway station. The Queen and the Princess Beatrice had been to London, and had entered their carriage to drive to the Castle. Mr. Hayes, late superintendent of the borough police, stated in evidence that he heard a report, and saw the prisoner about fifteen yards from Her Majesty. Maclean had fired in the direction of the carriage. He was instantly secured by the superintendent, and on the road to the police station a little Eton boy came up and hit him over the head with an umbrella. On the



## *POLICE /*

It is interesting to note the police proceedings when Her Majesty is leaving her London palace in *St. James's Park*. At the corner of the block of buildings nearest the gateway from which the royal carriage will emerge stands a sergeant. Immediately he sees the equipage on the move, he signals to Mr. Goldsworthy at the outer gate. The password is given, "Look out!" the people press forward, the police push back, and away, skilfully driven at a rapid pace, dashes Her Majesty's carriage, so quickly that a passing glimpse can be with difficulty obtained, though hours of weary waiting may be spent in the effort.

Marlborough House, the West End residence of the Prince of Wales, is always under police protection in addition to the military guards. The police have to keep a keen look-out for the approach of any carriage of the household. As it turns into Pall Mall from *St. James's Square* or the Park, the great gates fly open as by magic, and the equipage dashes into the courtyard without slackening its pace.

Police marching in a body do not salute, but the words "Eyes right," or "left," is given by the inspector or sergeant in charge, on passing a member of the royal family or a superior officer. On any special occasion, when the Queen or royal personage is pre-

sent, the police do not salute when they pass, but stand at attention, and keep a sharp look-out that advantage is not taken of the opportunity to pick pockets, break the ranks, or approach the royal carriage.

It was not until 1886 that the officer in command of the police in attendance upon Her Majesty was advanced to the rank of superintendent. Mr. Fraser has the charge of all arrangements in providing for the safety of the Queen while travelling, and this work entails a considerable amount of communication with the heads of the constabulary forces of the United Kingdom. For many years Mr. Walker, who recently died, was entrusted with the police arrangements affecting the safety of the Prince of Wales. The duty is assigned to the A division of police, to which Mr. Fraser is attached, whose popular superintendent, Mr. Dunlop, after thirty years of service, retired in 1888. Mr. Goldsworthy, who is not in uniform, has succeeded Mr. Butler at Buckingham Palace, where the duty, on account of the Drawing-rooms, is occasionally onerous.

Sir Charles Warren, late Commissioner of Metropolitan Police, in his famous article in *Murray's Magazine*, declared that "there were several misgivings as to the possibility of keeping order during the Jubilee, and the constable, to his astonishment, found himself to be considered decidedly a good fellow." Sir Charles Warren appeared to have the riots of 1886 always in his mind, and he never realized the characteristics of a London crowd. Superintendent Dunlop, on the other hand, found good humour

and good conduct to prevail; and this bearing is scarcely ever absent in the metropolis when the public and police are not in opposition.

It is upon record that the late Emperor of Germany, when, as Crown Prince, he visited this country and shared in the Jubilee celebrations, was very much struck with the ambulance arrangements, of which he took a note for future guidance. Mr. A. O. Mackellar, chief surgeon of Metropolitan Police, was able, at short notice and with scanty equipment from various sources, to organize a number of ambulance sections, which occupied all the important positions of the line of route. "Fortunately," he says, "no serious loss of life occurred, such as might have resulted from the giving way of an insecure stand, but, notwithstanding, nearly six hundred persons received 'first aid,' which was rendered in a manner to elicit the warmest praise, even from the most partial of critics." Again, at the volunteer march past before Buckingham Palace, these ambulances were signally useful.

At the time of the Jubilee the real danger was not to be feared from the populace of the capital, but from American emissaries, upon whom Mr. Monro, then chief of the Criminal Investigation Department, had kept a watchful eye. We shall in our next chapter deal somewhat in detail with the Jubilee plot which he was instrumental in frustrating, but we will not postpone reference to another event, which at first blush was put down as a dynamite outrage. This occurrence took place at Windsor, not long after the explosions in London. One night the cloak-room of the railway station was burned? Search amongst the

ruins resulted in the discovery of strange-looking metal "fixings," which were supposed to belong to an infernal machine. They were sent up to Paddington, and there the writer was permitted to take a sketch of these interesting relics. But no one could say how these bits of brass had been employed. Elaborate speculations were indulged in; but, alas for their correctness! these fragments of metal were presently identified as parts of the reel-fittings of ordinary fishing-rods! Further, a bottle of highly "inflammable liquid" was owned by the consignor as a quart of naphtha, and "a tin full of tow" turned out to have been sent by a local horse doctor. Dynamite there was none; but the cause of the fire was believed to have been "spontaneous combustion."

## CHAPTER XIII.

## PARLIAMENTARY POLICE.

Care of the Houses of Parliament—Warren's order—Change of police—Disappearance of old faces—Night watch—Sittings' watch—Admission of strangers—Mr. Denning's experiences—Alteration of rules—Break-down of the system—Jubilee plot—New proposals—Serving warrants within the precincts—Committee of privilege—Protecting statesmen—Political police—Election duties—The hustings—The ballot.

THE care of the Houses of Parliament falls in great measure within the province of the police. Of late years, events within and without the legislative chambers have not rendered responsibility lighter. Changes here, as elsewhere, have to be noted as of comparatively recent introduction, and, however necessary these alterations of administration were, one cannot but regret the absence of old faces, and the probability that gradually the old staff will be displaced by entirely new custodians, unless the Commissioner of Police sees fit to reverse the step taken by Sir Charles Warren when in office. The order was intended to strike at men who had become grey in the service of the "Houses" and enjoyed, deservedly, great popularity. Sooner than be "removed" these veterans resigned. The following is the copy of the order in question :—

## *PARLIAMENTARY POLICE.*

### "POLICE ORDERS.

"Friday, 23rd March, 1888.

"SPECIAL DUTIES AT THE PALACE OF WESTMINSTER.

A. (P.O., 7th January, 1888, 'Pay,' par. 5.)

"Sergeants and constables are appointed for duty at the Palace of Westminster for a period of three years. One third of the total number employed will be removed from this duty each year at the termination of the Parliamentary session, and their places will be taken by an equal number selected from those men who have performed duty temporarily inside and about the palace during the previous session.

"The men removed from duty at the end of the session will take their places in the roll for ordinary duty."

(Signed)

"CHARLES WARREN."

This regulation could not fail to produce irritation. The Parliamentary police had reason to consider themselves in privileged positions. By reason of long service they had a claim to consideration; but the watches are now officered by men who, although of long experience in the police, have passed comparatively a short time in the Palace of Westminster.

If, under the operation of any new rule, old stagers are withdrawn from positions which they have filled for so long, we may fully expect them to retire altogether from the police. The constables who have spent many years in the House are familiar with every nook and cranny, and it is wonderful what a

retentive memory they have for faces, and how keen and intelligent is the interest they take in political matters, apart altogether from Liberalism or Conservatism. They view the changing actors upon the scene as so many puppets, some destined soon to disappear from the fretting stage of St. Stephen's, whilst others, the Gladstones of the future, may in time become the patriarchs of the Houses, and outlive even the most veteran of the policemen on duty at the doors.

In addition to the watch which ends with the sitting, there is a night watch, consisting of an inspector, two sergeants, and sixteen constables. Four of the latter may be considered "old hands," having seen nearly twenty years of Parliamentary life, as viewed from the lobbies, both when the House is sitting and when the House is "up." Their hours of duty are from six a.m. to six p.m. They are drawn, as are their comrades of the other watch, from the A division, Whitehall.

Inspector Boghurst is in charge of the House of Lords police; Inspector Horsley, of the House of Commons; and Inspector Bullock, of the night police.

At the beginning of every session a most complete search is made of the vaults, with the object of guarding against any repetition of gunpowder plots.

The dynamite explosion which occurred in the House of Commons in 1885—and to which we shall presently have to refer more particularly—necessarily drew attention to the "loose and haphazard" system of admitting strangers to the House. There were many abuses. Orders were given to "bearer" on any piece of paper, and were transferred freely, and even forged.

Mr. Denning, who was chief inspector of police of the House of Commons from 1867 to 1887, and who was very much respected, gave the following evidence to the select committee which sat in 1888:—

“The system in vogue in the year 1867, when I first came, was that members were allowed to give one order a day, on any slip of paper which might first come to hand, writing on it the words, ‘Admit bearer to gallery of House of Commons.’ Persons holding these orders were allowed to come in at an early hour in the morning. It frequently happened that they would assemble outside the doors of Westminster Hall as early as half-past two or three a.m., when there was an important debate coming off in the evening of that day. It happened several times just after my appointment here, that when the House sat till two or half-past, as we left we found people waiting at the door to enter for the next sitting. But these persons who were waiting to go in at that early hour were not the persons who it was intended should occupy the seats in the gallery in the afternoon; but they had been hired by the original holders of the tickets to come and secure the seat, and they would thus occupy a seat in St. Stephen’s Hall from six a.m., when the doors were opened, until three in the afternoon. Sometimes one hundred and fifty to two hundred people would rush in when the door was opened, and frequently there was a race through Westminster Hall up the steps and into the Hall of St. Stephen, which was the place for waiting. Among these people trying to secure the first places there were often discreditable scenes; sometimes I have seen blows exchanged between different competitors struggling for the best posts. This state



of things went on for about a month after my appointment. Complaints were made to the serjeant-at-arms and to myself, and letters were written to the papers. The police were accused of connivance, and the result was the adoption of a ballot of precedence. I went through the ballot in dumb show with a few of my own men, and the commissioner, then Sir Richard Mayne, approved of it. It continued for eighteen years, and I conducted the ballot personally, the assistant serjeant-at-arms or the deputy serjeant always being present."

However, about forty per cent. of the orders put into the urn used to change hands, perhaps five or six times, and money was paid for them in several instances. There were no means of testing the *bona-fide* character of the orders, but one old officer, now dead, used sometimes to discover forgeries.

Very stringent rules were adopted in 1885, members being required to send letters of application from persons desiring admission to the Speaker's secretary, and these letters were afterwards compared with the strangers' signatures in the gallery book. It was intended that the police should be enabled to identify thereafter each person who went into the gallery.

The system broke down owing to its complexity and the impossibility of carrying it out in times of pressure. Renewed attention was given to the rules, as modified in the working, by the allegations of Mr. Monro, then chief of the Detective Department, with respect to the admission of suspicious characters to the precincts.

We may here briefly tell the story of the Jubilee plot, as it was termed, in so far as it concerns this

present chapter. It had, moreover, peculiar interest as showing that Mr. Monro's method was to frustrate the conspiracy by exposing its methods. Mr. Monro for this purpose sought the assistance of the press, which he warned that at an inquest about to be held there would be important revelations. At this inquiry the head of the Detective Department was present, and, contrary to precedent, he cross-examined the witnesses personally. The deceased man, Cohen, who had died under suspicious circumstances, had taken obscure lodgings in Lambeth, but he did not escape the surveillance of the police. Whilst being watched rapid consumption overtook him, and he succumbed. Amongst his effects were a bag of money and a Smith and Wesson revolver. One of his visitors was kept under observation. His name was Michael Harkins, and he also was provided with a Smith and Wesson revolver, although he declared that he was a stranger to Cohen. However, the inquest closed without indicating that either of these men had been intimately associated or had had a trace of dynamite in their possession, and there was a feeling that Mr. Monro's "disclosures" were a little premature.

Mr. Monro, however, knew what he was about, for the effect of publicity was to hurry another conspirator into disposing of the dynamite which actually existed, and suspicion was thereby firmly attached to him. But the real clue to his identity was obtained by the indiscretion with which this man (Callan) was betrayed, for when he went to cash some notes he had received from America he was detained, the payment of the notes having been stopped. It was then that the dynamite at his lodgings was discovered. The result of this

proceeding was that the two men, Callan and Harkins (who had been called as a witness at the inquest), were convicted. The heads of the gang, however, were not arrested; but Mr. Monro, pursuing his successful policy of timely prevention rather than apprehension after the damage has been done, communicated particulars of their movements to the newspapers; and subsequent events have shown that he was in a position to supplement these details with much more testimony, procured at great trouble in America.

It was clearly proved that two of the conspirators did obtain admission to the House of Commons, in spite of every precaution. One of them was Harkins, the convict, and the other was, the police said, a member of the Clan-na-Gael, who came over with Callan and Harkins for the purpose of committing an outrage in Jubilee week. However, as they missed the steamer, they did not arrive in Liverpool till the morning of June 21, the day of the Jubilee, and coming to London they discovered that their chief had been "marked" by Scotland Yard and was powerless. The dynamite was brought over by the three men mentioned, and also on the person of Cohen, who had, with the fifth conspirator, arrived in London in the previous May. Cohen would have taken the lead if the agent of the Clan-na-Gael had failed to put in an appearance.

Mr. Monro stated to the committee that the House of Commons was one point at which they aimed, and he added, "One of these men was sent down on two occasions to Windsor Castle to prospect the State apartments, taking with him a watch for the purpose of finding out how long it would occupy him to effect

his purpose and get away. On both occasions he found the State apartments closed."

With that part of the case which indicated the suspicions of the police as to the manner in which Harkins obtained admission to the House of Commons, we are not required to deal, as we are bound to accept the explanations which were offered as reasonable and satisfactory.

The police were not ignorant that the House of Commons was being visited by suspected persons even before 1885, but they were passed in because they were duly furnished with the proper orders. Inspector Denning said at that time no instructions had been given to report such visits, and he did not keep a record of them; but this officer always considered himself specially under the serjeant-at-arms. If he gave him an order which he (Mr. Denning) thought he could not carry out, he referred the matter to the Commissioner of Police, but not otherwise. The detective department made their own arrangements, he said.

Mr. Denning was asked, "Do I understand that there was no communication between the detective police and yourself when you were in charge of the police here?" and he replied, "I may say absolutely none. I had no communications made to me with regard to the visit of Harkins; I knew nothing of it. It is not the duty of the detectives to communicate with me; it was rather their duty to keep away from me and the police. I was always in uniform, and for them to be seen speaking to me would probably defeat the object they had in view. I am not speaking of the detectives in the House, but I refer to other detectives outside who came in."

Inspector Horsley, who now fills the position occupied by Mr. Denning formerly, told the committee that there could be no question that dangerous characters could get into the galleries, but those who had been known to the police had been carefully watched. He had known them obtain access to the central hall, to which they could get entrance by mentioning a member's name. Once inside, if they behaved themselves, they could stop as long as they pleased. The inspector said he was in communication with the detective department, and he would inform them of the presence of any suspected person.

Various suggestions were made by the select committee for the improvement of the regulations applying to the admission of strangers, the most important being the establishment of an office, under the control of the police, to be erected near to the foot of the staircase leading from the central hall to the gallery, with which it would be in electrical communication. To this office members would have to make application for orders, giving the names and addresses of the strangers to be admitted as well as their own. These applications were to be registered and numbered, and tickets thereupon issued. The holder, on the date in question, would have to satisfy the clerks in the admission office that he was the person named in the application, and at the door of the gallery he would have to give up his ticket. It was also recommended that a waiting-room should be provided, so as to avoid the necessity of a member having to take a caller upon the terrace, or into the smoking-room. Strangers were still to be allowed to dine with members, but their names should be registered. With this exception, no

strangers, save those on the lobby list, should be permitted to enter any part of the House, except the galleries and the proposed waiting-room, which would be erected on the completion of the restoration of Westminster Hall. One main purpose of the office was to enable detectives to view for themselves everybody who entered the buildings.

Needless to add, the contents of any bag or parcel carried into the place are as rigidly examined now as at any previous period.

The practice, under Mr. Horsley's rule, has become, or is likely to become, stricter than heretofore. In the session of 1888 there was a further limitation, strangers sending their cards into the House no longer being permitted to address more than one member at a time. The central hall is practically open to the public. At the entrance of the corridor leading to the parts of the House to which the privileged alone have admission, two policemen stand. They are furnished with cards printed as follows :—

“HOUSE OF COMMONS.

“ *Member's name* \_\_\_\_\_

“ *Visitor's name* \_\_\_\_\_

“ *Address* \_\_\_\_\_

“ *Time* \_\_\_\_\_ ”

This card, upon being filled up, is taken by a messenger into the lobby, and should the member with whom an interview is wished be in attendance, he will shortly come to the central hall, where his constituent may speak to him. In November, 1888, this easy way of

obtaining an audience with a member of Parliament led Constable Sullivan, of the Royal Irish Constabulary, to send a card in for Mr. Sheehy, an Irish member for whom he had a summons, and from whom he wished to know whether he would accept service. There had been exciting scenes in connection with the arrest of Irish members upon their leaving the sacred territory at Westminster, which tradition has constituted a city of refuge, with, if the parallel be not uncomplimentary, all the immunities of Alsatia ; but never before had a police officer attempted to outrage the privileges of the House of Commons.

Very closely allied to the subject of protecting the House of Commons is the kindred duty of protecting the lives of its prominent members from attack. Not merely in Ireland, where such danger might be expected as a matter of course, but in England, and in London, Cabinet ministers were and are beholden to the police for their watchfulness. Mr. Gladstone, Sir William Harcourt, and other statesmen were, before their conversion to Home Rule doctrines, regularly "shadowed" by friendly policemen, the necessity for which apparently disappeared when they changed their political opinions on the question of the day. Irish parliamentarians, of course, had nothing to do with it, but the views of Irish-Americans, acting independently of them, may have given ground for alarm ; and, at all events, the brutal assassination in Phoenix Park brought home to politicians the extreme personal risk they incurred by opposing the cry for Home Rule.

The less the police are used for political purposes the better. There was a great amount of capital got

out of the alleged domiciliary visits of the police in connection with political meetings in the East End, for the purpose of obtaining information. For a long time, such was the tenderness upon the subject of political police, as some people feared that our forces would become, that they were denied the franchise; but that reproach was removed in 1887, and the police have now every right and privilege possessed by the citizen at large, except the power to vote in a municipal and a County Council election.

Elections of all kinds afford the police plenty of work.

In the days when the hustings were an important feature at Parliamentary elections, the police frequently had very rough duty to perform, and more especially when the balance of opinion was pretty even. The hustings were the common meeting-ground of both political parties, candidates, their supporters, and friends occupying the ends, and the returning officer the middle of the platform in front. The first day's proceedings were occupied with the nomination. Each candidate arrived with his supporters at a time appointed. The public had either already assembled, or had marched in advance of the man of their choice. The excitement at the outset was usually confined to cheers and counter-cheers. The candidates were each duly proposed and seconded, and then, in turns, they addressed the meeting. The returning officer then had to demand a show of hands. All now was silent. It was amusing to observe the friends of each candidate rush from the hustings to swell the crowd for the "show." Hands were held up, and then all was per-



fectly still for a few moments, the silence being followed by clapping and cheering. This scene was repeated as the other candidate or candidates came forward. A show of hands at an election was a sight not to be forgotten.

The returning officer had to announce to the crowd : " I declare the show of hands to be in favour of Mr. — " "

This proceeding was usually succeeded by cheering, hooting, stone - throwing, free fights, window smashing, and general uproar. Police with their reserve forces, drafted from other towns, did their best to keep the peace. Once a successful ruse was practised at an election in the belief that a serious disturbance was likely to take place, owing, just before the election, to a popular candidate, who had got into debt, having been conveyed away for safe keeping. Another candidate was brought forward, and the day before the nomination the police officers selected a number of the roughest customers he could find in the town, and had them sworn in. He put a piece of broad white tape round their arms, with the words " Special Constable " printed on it. Each individual was provided with a truncheon. These men paraded for duty on the mornings of nomination, polling, and declaration days at seven o'clock, and were drafted to different rooms, furnished with provisions and ale, and kept there to be in readiness should they be required, but of course they were not. Had these men been free in the streets, there would have been endless disorder.

The rival parties on the polling day announced at the committee rooms the state of the poll during the

progress of the voting. Of course each claimed to be in advance of the other. Although at the conclusion of the poll the result was known, the official declaration was not made until the following day; when everybody again assembled at the hustings, and the returning officer declared the successful candidate to be duly elected. Of course there were speeches, returning thanks, replies, etc., and very often, to finish up with, a free fight amongst the crowd.

What a difference there has been since the introduction of the ballot! The hustings are a thing of the past. Candidates are now differently nominated; the police work is much lighter. It is very rarely found that police officers are maltreated at elections as formerly. Policemen are told off to convey the ballot boxes to the different booths, do duty there until the poll closes, and hand the boxes sealed to the officer at night. Constables are always kept ready in force to guard against any popular outburst when the returning officer declares the result of the poll, but it is not often necessary for the police to interfere. Of course there is always a little popular ferment at contested elections, but it seldom reaches the high pitch it did under the rule of open voting and the hustings. Wise officers always make allowance for a little popular feeling, and do not resort to extreme measures unless compelled, knowing well that the ferment will soon subside.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## DYNAMITE.

Local Government Board explosion (1883)—Nitro-glycerine at Birmingham—The Gallagher gang—District Railway attacked—Part of Victoria Station destroyed (1884)—The clock-pistol—A scheme to blow up railway stations—Arrest of Daley at Birkenhead—Scotland Yard, Junior Carlton, and St. James's Square explosions—Nelson Column (May, 1884)—London Bridge affair—Gower Street explosion (January, 1885)—Tower of London and Houses of Parliament attacked (January, 1885)—Arrest of Cunningham—The brown box—Arrest of Burton—Piecing evidence—Unmasking the conspiracy—Convictions.

WITH the history of Fenianism we shall have nothing to do, except to recall the fact that Sergeant Brett, a police officer, was murdered because he would not give up the keys of the Manchester prison van in 1867—an event which was very speedily followed by the Clerkenwell explosion, for causing which Barrett, sentenced to death, was hanged at Newgate, the last execution which ever took place in public in London.

At nine p.m. on March 15, 1883, London had a new sensation. It experienced a dynamite explosion. The place selected was Charles Street, where the Local Government Board Offices front the King Street Police Station, the quarters of the A

division. There was and is still a vacant plot intervening. The infernal machine, of what pattern was never positively determined, was placed near to one of the windows, under the balustrading, which was blown into fragments, massive portions being propelled as far as the police station, the wall of which was actually burst in by one of the pieces. In the interior of the Government building, four or five rooms were more or less wrecked, the floors above, as well as the basement, having suffered from upheaval as well as the downward effects of the detonation. A great number of premises in the neighbourhood had the whole of their windows broken, the glass having been shattered in most peculiar fashion.

The scene of the explosion was visited by royalty and by distinguished people on the following day. A reward of £1,000 was offered for information concerning the perpetrators of this outrage and of the attack on the *Times* office on the same night. The latter was frustrated by the vigilance of the watchman, who observed something smoking and dashed a pail of water over it. It was a vessel which resembled a sheet-iron band-box, and it was provided with a fuse. The explosive was of the same composition as that which was used at Glasgow a few weeks previously, when a partially successful attempt was made to destroy a gasholder, the chief result on that occasion being deplorable injuries to a number of poor cottagers residing in the neighbourhood.

It was in June of the same year that the fortunate discovery of the nitro-glycerine factory at Birmingham was made by the police, a detective, who had his suspicions aroused, having disguised himself as a painter

and visited Whitehead, the chemist of the plotters. The connection between this man and Dr. Gallagher's gang was cleverly traced by means of the seizure of nitro-glycerine, which was consigned by him to London in india-rubber fishing-boots, contained in a box. It was a hazardous mission to convey this trunk in a cab to Woolwich, a duty which devolved upon the police. By this fortunate stroke of detection the metropolis was saved a series of frightful disasters, and there was a sequence of timely arrests. A clue to the hiding-places of the conspirators was obtained by the papers found on the persons of the prisoners captured. They frequented small hotels and retired lodgings in the south of London, except Gallagher, who lived as a gentleman in the Strand. The evidence of Norman or Lynch, the informer, enabled the police to secure convictions against the principals, but two men who had been accused were liberated for the want of sufficient evidence. One of these was Dalton, believed to be the author of the Local Government Board explosion, who was, however, reapprehended and taken to Glasgow, where he was, with five others, sentenced to twenty years' penal servitude, five more dynamiters at the same time each having seven years. At Liverpool, arrests were also made, with convictions following.

In the autumn, on October 30, there were two explosions on the Metropolitan District Railway, one near to Charing Cross, and the other at Praed Street, when two third-class carriages were shattered and sixty-two persons were injured. This crime was never brought home to the perpetrators. Next followed, on

February 26, 1884, an explosion at the Victoria terminus of the London, Brighton, and South Coast Railway, which took place at three minutes past one a.m. The cloak-room and booking-office were destroyed, together with the glass-covered shelter outside, whilst the entrance to the subway was choked with rubbish. The area of the damage was 65 ft. by 100 ft., and the ruins resembled those of a disastrous fire. A great quantity of luggage was rendered undistinguishable. About thirty truck-loads of *débris* had to be removed. Two men were seriously hurt. Examination by Colonel Majendie, who at this period was prominently before the public as one of the Home Office inspectors of explosives, showed that there was a circular patch of discolouration on the brickwork, which was perforated as with shot.

Search in the cloak-rooms of other termini revealed that the contemplated outrage had been partially successful only, and that, from one cause and another, the infernal machines which were deposited at Charing Cross, Paddington, and Ludgate Hill, had failed to act. Amongst the luggage unclaimed there were a valise, a portmanteau, and a shabby black-leather bag. In each of these articles there was arranged an ordinary American alarm clock, from which the back had been removed so as to admit of the attachment of a pistol with copper wire. The trigger was pressed by the revolving winder, which turned from right to left as the alarm ran down. The pistol was loaded with a small cartridge of fulminate of mercury, and in front of it was placed a cake of dynamite, with detonators inserted therein, and connected by a quick-burning fuse. The whole was contained in

a metal box, and around it were packed about twenty pounds of dynamite.

There were little matters which, when pieced together, clearly proved that the outrages, which were intended to have taken place simultaneously, were planned by one set of conspirators. A fused mainspring which was picked out of the *débris* at Victoria Station corresponded exactly with the mainspring of the other clocks, the dynamite was identical, and of a kind not manufactured in England, and a part of the Paddington clock and the labels of the dynamite cakes were found in the Ludgate Hill bag, whilst the Paddington portmanteau was actually "booked" at Charing Cross, with the valise, and was afterwards removed.

The City Police, to whom the Ludgate Hill bag was handed, conveyed it to Old Jewry, and when Mr. McWilliam came down from his room he found that the men were handling the dynamite with a recklessness which argued that they were unacquainted with the danger. Colonel Ford, who presently arrived, furthermore discovered that the clock had gone off and scarcely missed the cartridge, and his first care was to disconnect the fuse, which was still attached. Fortunately in this, as in all other cases, the police experienced no accident in dealing with the explosives.

More rewards were offered, £1,000 by the police and £1,000 by the railway companies, and descriptions were published by the commissioner of suspected men. From information given by the proprietors of a private hotel in Great Portland Street, it was ascertained that two men had stayed there, and with them they had

certain bags, one of which was positively identified as the Paddington portmanteau. The purpose in bringing the baggage to the hotel was to transfer the dynamite from one piece of luggage to the others, and to arrange and wind up the clocks, for in the room pieces of a box which had contained one of the clocks were noticed, together with "crumbs" of dynamite. From a careful comparison of the bags described and those annexed by the police, it appeared that two bags were missing, but they never turned up. Another link in the chain of evidence was a fragment of an overcoat which laid in the Charing Cross bag.

Information was also obtained of the movements of men who had arrived at Southampton and had left for London on February 20, six days before the explosion.

There the matter rested, and the newly formed branch of the Detective Department, under Chief Inspector Littlechild, were perhaps supposed by the public to be nonplused, but they were busy sifting every statement and accumulating the facts for future employment.

Perhaps some speculation on the part of the guilty parties that the police were acquiring valuable knowledge prompted the effort to destroy the records. The detective department at that time occupied the upper floor of the insignificant structure which stands in the middle of Scotland Yard. To accommodate the dynamite detectives, a room nearest to a public-house on the east side had been allotted. Under it there was a corner ill lighted, screened from public view by iron-work. It was the very place to lodge an infernal machine. Of what pattern this machine was, for one



was put there on the night of May 30, 1884, there remained nothing to show. At Birkenhead, in the month previous, Daley had been arrested, having in his possession phials whereby explosions might be produced by the action of acid; but it seems probable that the Scotland Yard explosion was effected by means of cake dynamite, and not much of that, for although a large hole was made in the corner of the building, and the public-house opposite was wrecked, most of the damage to the detective quarters was to be attributed to the fall of a huge iron safe, the supports of which had been displaced. In this case the constable on duty was injured, and also the driver of a cab, which was blown almost to bits. In the Rising Sun public-house many customers received cuts and bruises.

Scotland Yard was in an uproar that night, for hardly had the report of the explosion died away than information came to hand of the attack upon the Junior Carlton Club, where a bomb had been thrown into the basement, and another against the wall of Sir W. Wynn's house in St. James's Square. More damage was done, not of a very extensive character, and injured people, five or six in number, were removed to the hospitals.

A parcel of dynamite, which had been connected by a burning fuse, was also discovered at the base of Nelson's Column, and the cakes were taken to Scotland Yard, where they were placed upon the pavement.

After these outrages, naturally the custodians of public buildings grew very anxious. Military sentinels were employed at Government offices, and at

the British Museum a roped passage-way marked the visitors' route through the galleries, access to the monuments at close quarters being denied. Every bag was examined, but, in spite of all precautions taken, on the 13th of the following December London was again thrown into a state of alarm. The dynamiters had changed their tactics, and their object now was London Bridge. Under the arch nearest the Surrey side had been in some way fired a machine which slightly cracked the solid masonry of one course, and destroyed some timber baulks, but otherwise did no harm. The attempt was believed to have been made at six p.m. Information was obtained of a boat which had been let, and then afterwards found adrift; but the owner could give no satisfactory clue. A reward of £5,000 failed to discover the conspirators. One of the perpetrators was believed, it is said, to have been killed in this attempt, and his family were supported by subscriptions of his compatriots in America.

Early in the year 1885, on January 2, there was an explosion on the Metropolitan Railway, between Gower Street and King's Cross stations. A bomb had been thrown from a passing train, and the effect had been to dig a hole in the side of the tunnel, to smash all the wooden steam deflectors for a quarter of a mile, and to break windows in four carriages of the train. It was a curious experience to ascertain the nature of the damage done, for the inspection had to be conducted during the full roar of traffic, and to the unaccustomed mind there was something unnerving to penetrate into the foggy and pitch-dark mouth of Gower Street tunnel, and walk towards the

advancing locomotives, whose lamps glared like a demon's eye as they rushed towards the pedestrian groping his way by the soot-covered walls.

No reward was offered by the Government. Three weeks later—that is, on January 24, 1885—occurred the memorable explosions in the Tower of London, the House of Commons, and Westminster Hall. The last was noteworthy because of the courage of Constable Cole, who, in a narrow paved embrasure leading to the crypt, had his attention drawn by a lady to a smoking parcel like a quilted petticoat, with four rows of pockets, four in a row, each containing a cake of dynamite. The officer, it will be recollected, seized it, and rushed with it into the hall, until, as acid was trickling on to his hands, he could hold it no longer, when it exploded, causing the dust of centuries to fall in a thick cloud which obscured what was passing. Constable Cox ran forward and fell into a great hole in the pavement, in which Cole, terribly injured, and Mr. Green, who had lost his hearing, were huddled, whilst two women had been hurled against the wall.

Mr. Monro says, "Though it looks like a paradox, the fact of Sergeant Cole not having succeeded in putting out the fuse undoubtedly saved life, because the second explosion in the lobby was the more dangerous, and when the first explosion took place in the crypt, all the strangers ran to see what the cause of that was, so that when the explosion in the lobby took place there was nobody there." If there had been, there is no doubt there would have been loss of life.

This second catastrophe happened four minutes and a half after the first. As regards the structural

damage, one of the galleries was lifted bodily, and the stone stairs on the right-hand side of the entrance under the clock, leading to the Speaker's Gallery, were displaced. Joists, door-jambs, and flooring had been much injured; but the visible effects appeared the worst, for the interior of the House was put into complete disorder, benches being overturned and broken, gallery supports projected into the gangway, and a piece of timber had torn open the green leather and ripped up the horsehair stuffing of the seat at that time usually occupied by Mr. Gladstone. Dust thickly coated the table of the House, fragments of painted glass littered the floor, with torn hangings and broken ornaments. In the estimates for Civil Services for the year ending March 31, 1886, appeared the following items with regard to the cost of repairing the damage done by the explosions of dynamite on January 24:—House of Commons, £5,500; furniture, clocks, etc., £550; electrical installation, £75; total, £6,125. The repairs to Westminster Hall cost £2,500. The cost of police engaged on special duties in connection with dynamite outrages is put down at £38,000, being an increase of £26,000 upon 1884-85.

In the Tower of London, the spot selected for the deposit of the infernal machine was outside the narrow doorway which leads from St. John's Chapel into the armoury, where rifles in thousands are stacked. The explosion occurred at a minute or two after two p.m., causing a fire in the banqueting hall, at the south end of the first floor of the White Tower, and also in the council chamber on the second floor. A hole six feet long was produced, marking the exact site. Rifles were thrown down in disorder, and the

contents generally were severely damaged by the explosion and by fire and water. Five visitors were wounded.

The first step taken by the military authorities was to close the gates, with the result that they entrapped an Irish-American, James Gilbert Cunningham, who gave unsatisfactory answers to the questions of the detectives. His statements were not believed, and he was detained. The Detective Department had a difficult job before them, but they were equal to the emergency. Cunningham, it was ascertained, had, on arriving at his lodgings in Great Prescott Street, Whitechapel, on the Christmas Eve, brought with him a brown box, which he asserted belonged to a friend. The brown box, or trunk, disappeared, and a black one was substituted; and a little while afterwards the owner changed his address to a house in Great Scarborough Street, which was more convenient.

On examining the prisoner's black box, a guide to the Tower was found, and a small detonator, similar to those used at the several railway stations. The police succeeded in tracing the brown trunk to the possession of a man named Burton, who had been lodging in the since celebrated quarter of Mitre Square. In this retired spot lived a City policeman, who, noticing that Burton did no work, communicated his suspicions to Old Jewry, with the result that a plain-clothes man was put on to watch, and Burton and Cunningham were seen in company.

Link by link the police connected the chain. Evidence was produced showing that the prisoners—for Burton was placed in the dock with Cunningham—were in London at the time of the explosions at Scot-

land Yard and in St. James's Square, and that they were the mysterious people who were known to have arrived at Waterloo Station from Southampton. It was proved that the portmanteau which failed to explode at Charing Cross was one which Burton brought to London. In it was found a piece of a coat, with peculiar buttons, which Burton had worn.

Further, the complicity of the prisoners in the Gower Street explosion was shown by their identification on the part of fellow-passengers in the train; and Cunningham was also proved to have purchased an overcoat large enough to go over another, the theory of the prosecution being that he had conveyed the dynamite into Westminster Hall round his waist in the form of a belt, concealed from view by the second overcoat.

Burton and Cunningham were both sentenced to penal servitude for life.

Of course, all the dynamiters who have visited this country have not yet fallen into the hands of justice; for example, there was an attempt to start a dynamite factory at Paddington in a shop opened as a second-hand bookseller's, from which place two men decamped when they discovered that the police were on their traces. But it is satisfactory to be assured that the Chief Commissioner of Metropolitan Police has made a special study of the ways of Fenianism and the dynamite faction, and should a recurrence of outrages come about, he will be quite prepared for them.

## CHAPTER XV.

## MOBS.

The Socialists—Early gatherings—Riots of February, 1886—Compensation Act—Disturbances of spring, 1887—The origin of the Trafalgar Square meetings (1887)—Vacillation of the Government—Misapplied philanthropy—The Socialists again—Vagrancy—Street processions—"We will have work or bread"—The first conflict—The "frog's march"—Hyde Park—Riding the orators down—More fighting—Government dilemma—Arrest of a newspaper correspondent—Meetings prohibited—Demonstration of the clubs (November 13)—Charging the square—Arrest of loafers—Military called out—Riot Act—List of the wounded—Warren's proclamation—Specials enrolled—Hyde Park (November 20)—Renewed attempts at disorder in 1889.

WHEN Mr. Bradlaugh was fighting his battle with the House of Commons, he held more than one meeting of his supporters in Trafalgar Square, and his powerful personal influence never failed to keep a huge crowd in order. The man who had shown himself possessed of muscular strength as well as of mental power was not the individual to be quelled by brute force. He frequently met opposition by the strength of his arm. At that time, on the dispersal of Mr. Bradlaugh's assemblies, a red cap on a pole was sometimes introduced, at first furtively, and then with boldness. The bearers of this republican symbol were understood to represent the foreign element in London—members of such "underground"

clubs as those which passed resolutions sympathizing with the assassination of the Czar of Russia. They were the forerunners of the Socialist party, who, led by men of position, began an agitation on legitimate lines. By degrees the party grew in numbers, and split themselves into distinct divisions.

The most prominent section was called the Social Democratic Federation. They were popularly supposed to have more influence than they really possessed. Their *modus operandi* was chiefly to hold open-air meetings, at which they distributed literature of their own production, and collected money for the outgoings. In February, 1885, they espoused the cause of the unemployed, and sent a deputation to the Local Government Board. They afterwards held a "demonstration" upon the Embankment, where resolutions defining the nebulous Socialistic programme were carried.

Already at these gatherings there began to be manifested signs of a turbulent spirit. During the next few months there were collisions with the police in Dod Street, Limchouse, the Socialists having carried on Sunday meetings, to the alleged interference with the public traffic. So long as these conflicts continued the Socialists had a large following, and the fact was clear that their cause was fostered rather than hindered by the opposition of the police. It is a pity that this lesson was not learned by Sir Edmund Henderson.

It was in February, 1886, that a party of so-called professional agitators took up the Fair Trade cry, and announced a meeting to be held in Trafalgar Square. The Socialists objected to the title of the leaders of this movement to represent the working classes.



Accordingly they appeared in the square and started rival platforms. They obtained the ear of the people, the Fair Traders were discomfited, and a cry was raised, "To the Park! To the Park!"

A straggling mob proceeded westwards; the police were powerless to resist. No means were at hand to warn the police of the adjoining divisions. Down Pall Mall the ruffians rushed, and, as the Socialist spokesmen asserted, they were hooted by the clubmen, with the result that stones were thrown. Along St. James's Street they poured, picking up flints from the roadway, smashing the plate-glass windows, and, finally, looting the shops. Away they went by Piccadilly into Hyde Park, where more speeches were delivered from the base of the Achilles Statue, and these harangues formed the subject of an abortive criminal prosecution. For, whetted by their preliminary exploits, the mob dashed off through by-lanes into North and South Audley Streets, wrecking stately shops, injuring the salesmen, clearing the shelves of the bakers and the counters of the butchers, throwing one dealer's goods through the plate-glass of his neighbour's shop, and so into Oxford Street. Here a jeweller's shop was attacked, and one of the owner's sons bodily thrown through the window. Spreading alarm and consternation, the rioters went Citywards, meeting with no check until they reached Marylebone Lane. Here a file of police of the D division succeeded in dispersing the marauders, but the panic did not terminate. On the morrow there was a fog, and the progress of the rioters was marked by a line of closed shops, stripped of their contents and apparently ruined. There were repeated rumours that the "un-

employed" were bent upon renewing their attack, a meeting taking place in Trafalgar Square. It was not until three or four days had passed that London was restored to its normal confidence, and in the interval there had scarcely been a quarter which had not suffered from the report that the "rioters were coming," at the threat of which impending visitation the tradesmen hurriedly put up their shutters to protect their stock.

Indignation meetings were held, Mr. Smith, M.P., presiding at one of them. A Compensation Act was passed, under which £7,600 was paid to the losers by the riot; but the Police Fund was reimbursed in this expenditure by the contributions of the metropolitan parishes, including the City, so that the ratepayers were the real sufferers by the inefficiency of the police.

Sir Edmund Henderson retired from the commissionership, Sir Charles Warren was telegraphed for, and he succeeded to the office, with the idea of reorganizing the police.

The Socialists were for a time inactive. In the following November, the Lord Mayor's procession was threatened, but without disturbance resulting. In April, 1887, the police opposed the Socialists by force in Hyde Park Place and the Edgware Road; several were arrested, and convictions were obtained. Sir Charles Warren apprehended disturbance unless the police were supported by the public. To use his own expression, "The barometer of public feeling and opinion, so far as the public journals put them forward, had oscillated evidently from period to period." The commissioner had no doubt an exaggerated notion of press criticism; he was often much upset by it.

His South African and Egyptian experience did not serve him in good stead. An average Londoner might have foretold what would have happened when he began, towards the close of the summer, to allow a crowd of miserable wretches to camp out in Trafalgar Square, using the ornamental fountains as lavatories and latrines, and displaying their dirt and depravity to the world. Questions were asked about them in Parliament, and the police appear to have been guided by an answer given by the First Commissioner of Works. In justice to Sir Charles Warren, it must be admitted that the Government never seemed to know their own minds from one day to another. It is evident that Mr. Matthews did not predict what crop would be reaped from the seed which was sown.

From scores the outcasts grew in numbers to hundreds. The press gave vivid descriptions, illustrated, of the extraordinary scenes which took place in Trafalgar Square by night. Philanthropists sent down van-loads of bread, and the starvelings of London came like carrion birds to the feast. Public attention was directed spasmodically, as is its custom, to the question of vagrants and casual wards. New duties were undertaken by the police, a large distribution of lodging-house tickets being made by them to the deserving, whilst they also opened registers for the unemployed. Some lasting good was done in consequence, for, in order to get rid of the troublesome tenants of Trafalgar Square, it was necessary to insist upon the stringent enforcement of the Vagrant Act. In the words of one of the superintendents (Mr. Steggle) the following was the result :—

“ Much good has been, and is being, done by the

police with regard to the more strict enforcement of the Vagrant Act, thereby preventing large numbers of the destitute poor sleeping by night in the open streets and places, and the recent intervention of the Commissioner of Police with parochial authorities has resulted in such accommodation being provided by means of increased casual wards and lodging-houses as never before existed. The also recently introduced system of telegraphing from police station to police station information as to the vacancies in the various casual wards is an excellent one, and prevents poor wayfarers having to walk from place to place ere they can find shelter. The efforts of the parochial authorities and the police in this respect should not be relaxed; then there will be no real necessity for a homeless person to spend a night in the open air."

One night, a man got up in Trafalgar Square and addressed the loiterers, but his speech was forbidden. This was enough for the Socialists. The course of free speech had been again attacked. They put in an appearance next evening with a banner inscribed, "We will have work or bread." It must here be stated that the leaders of this movement were not the same as those who had previously figured in Trafalgar Square. To advertise themselves they adopted the plan of marching in procession through the streets, accompanied by a *posse* of police. Their programme also included visits to the Government Offices, to the Mansion House, to Lord Salisbury's town residence in Arlington Street, and to Westminster Abbey. These extraordinary proceedings were fostered by the publicity of the press, but the Commissioner of Police seemed blind to the fact that every day

speeches were reported which would have justified him in putting the law in operation.

Day by day the crowds became larger and more impudent. Reporters were openly assailed by the speakers, who accused them of being in league with the "tecs," which was not the case, for Sir Charles Warren appeared to distrust the reporters' notes.

On one of the occasions when the mob marched Citywards, the black banner, "We will have work or bread," was captured by the City Police in St. Bride Street, where the outbreak of disorder compelled the authorities to interfere. For a long while the flag was preserved as a trophy at Old Jewry. The fighting in the streets, of course, added fuel to the fire.

On Monday, October 16, the "unemployed" meeting in Trafalgar Square delegated another deputation to wait upon the Lord Mayor, and this time six men made their way to the Mansion House, leaving their followers engaged in horse-play around the Nelson Monument. Sir Henry Knight was sitting in the justice room, and he administered a rebuke and a lecture upon political economy to the spokesmen. On the return of the latter to the square, one of them was repudiated by the loafers as being a "capitalist," and his proposal to open a register book of unemployed was scouted as a police trick. Attacked on all sides, he had to flee for his life.

The concourse of loafers and thieves raised the cry of "To the City!" and, at the tail of a red flag, they began to move in that direction; but they had not proceeded very far when there was a great helter-skelter, and mounted policemen were seen plunging about on the pavements, whilst men and boys were

driven for refuge into the courtyard of Charing Cross Railway Station and the adjacent streets. A woman was trampled underfoot, and the massive railings of the Golden Cross Hotel gave way under the pressure.

A retreat was beaten into the square, where the remnants of the flagpoles were shown by excited orators to the mob. A resolution in defiance of Sir Charles Warren was passed, and at last open pillage was preached. Then the police intervened, and free fights ensued. An order was given to clear the pedestal of Nelson Column and also the square. Squads of police were moved about, breaking up knots of people, and the guerilla warfare extended into Northumberland Avenue, but at nightfall the victory was won and the cause of law and order triumphed.

The next morning there was a resumption of hostilities. An order was again given to clear the square, and a stolen meeting took place in Adelaide Street, which was broken up by the police. At each angle of the square was posted a detachment of mounted patrols, under the charge of a superintendent, and constables in threes and fours kept the crowd moving along the pavements and on the terrace fronting the National Gallery, whilst in the neighbouring streets the ordinary beats were "worked" by small bodies of constables. Then it was that the first signs were manifest that the temper of the constables, overstrained by long hours of duty, was beginning to give way, and there was a good deal of significance in the observation of one policeman as he bound up his bruised fist in a handkerchief, after a hard bout, "This is what we have been waiting for. We are not going to do double duty for nothing!"

There were arrests, and the conveyance of prisoners to the King Street Police Station by the "frog's march" was frequently to be seen, arousing a good deal of indignation in the civilian mind unaccustomed to such rough methods. It is certain that, had the police been less efficiently organised, the repetition of riot in the streets would have followed, for more than one attempt was frustrated by the movements of the police cavalry, against which the mob could not stand.

In the meantime there was a large crowd growing in Hyde Park, where the red flag had been set up. Omnibuses were used for the transport of the police to reinforce the local division, to be prepared for any emergency. Two of the leaders did their best to control the disorderly throng, but the expressed intention was to promenade the streets.

Whilst the speeches were in progress, the mounted police could be seen, under cover of the trees, heading off the crowd, which presently turned towards the gates at the Bayswater end of Hyde Park. The demonstrators broke into a run in the attempt to escape from the trap, but the police were at the exit before them, and when the foremost men saw themselves distanced they made a backward rush. A dozen men went down in a heap, and a sergeant of police was badly crushed. The banner-bearer turned and fled into the open, and rallied his men. Park railings were torn up, chairs broken to provide ugly weapons, and policemen's helmets kicked about like footballs. Truncheons were drawn, and hand-to-hand encounters took place, whilst the mounted men rode the crowd down amidst the yells of the rioters. In the height of the tussle a prominent politician offered a revolver to a police

sergeant. The ringleaders were arrested, and once more the police triumphed.

On the following day a cordon of constables prevented access to Trafalgar Square, and the "unemployed" made their rendezvous at Hyde Park, the police being quite ready for them. It was some time before the red flag was hoisted, and the usual flood of eloquence was turned on. The word was presently passed secretly amongst the bystanders that they were to separate and make their way by circuitous routes to the Temple Railway Station on the Thames Embankment, where it was intended to form a huge procession. Intimation of this manœuvre was, of course, gained by the plain clothes police, and communicated to the uniform branch.

Very soon the streets leading from Hyde Park to Piccadilly were filled with men walking rapidly eastwards, and the alarmed tradesmen, warned by previous experience, hastily put up their shutters. At the corner of Berkeley Street the police suddenly faced about, charging the pedestrians, driving them into the shelter of doorways, and as vigorously expelling them. There were similar onslaughts along the line of route, staves being freely used and stones thrown, several men and boys sustaining injury. Arrived at the Thames Embankment, the police were masters of the situation. Only about a thousand of the demonstrators had persisted in the attempt to reach the rendezvous. A stand was, however, made at the appointed spot; but the attempt to hold a meeting was promptly suppressed by means of organized charges on the part of the police.

Within the City boundaries the City Police adopted



less military but quite as effectual methods, for by placing constables well amongst the men they were prevented from acting in concert, and gradually they were dispersed.

From day to day meetings were held in Hyde Park, and at the termination of each day's proceedings, which were very prolonged, there was a tussle of more or less severity with the police. On the Sunday, another visit was paid to Westminster Abbey, where some of the ruffians behaved with indecency. A gathering was also held on Clerkenwell Green, which is a recognized spot for Sunday oratory of all kinds. From this place, on the dispersal of a previous meeting, there had been a good deal of stone-throwing, so that the police were prepared for disorder. The Sessions House was kept filled with constables ready for an emergency. At this meeting the leaders of the political clubs uttered an indignant protest against the illegal and brutal conduct of the police, and they called for the dismissal of Sir Charles Warren "because, by reason of his military training, he was unable to grasp the purport, and, therefore, to regulate the peaceable meetings of law-abiding citizens."

In the course of the following week the Government appeared to be in such a dilemma that the resumption of meetings was allowed in Trafalgar Square, although on some days they were as peremptorily forbidden. The Home Secretary, by his ambiguous expressions to a deputation, left it an open question as to whether *bona-fide* gatherings in the square were illegal. Henceforward the question was becoming hedged about by political difficulties, all of

which might have been avoided by a determined policy at the outset. But the police now fell into the huge blunder of mistaking Mr. Bennet Burleigh, a renowned war correspondent, for a Socialist; and one day, when, in pursuance of their fluctuating policy, they were carrying out an order to "clear the square," they arrested him and took him to the King Street Police Station, where he was subject to the insult of indecent and irritating exclamations on the part of suburban policemen assembled in the station yard.

Mr. Burleigh's personality must have been very well known to many officers; indeed, they have since admitted that they were surprised at the conduct of their colleagues, but they persisted in charging him at Bow Street Police Court. Sir Charles Warren did not interfere. He had no liking for press men, and perhaps he thought they deserved no privilege, although he was understood to be desirous of affording them official recognition. When it came to the point, he declined to accede to the request of the National Association of Journalists on the ground that there was no reason for a change in the relations of police and press. The magistrate ordered Mr. Burleigh to enter into his recognizances to keep the peace for six months. This "undeserved" stigma was indignantly repelled, and the magistrate simply remanded him. On the rehearing, of course, the case fell to the ground.

The *Daily Telegraph*, after speaking of Mr. Burleigh's distinguished career, said, "Sir Charles Warren knows him well, and greatly respects him, nor is there, in fact, any man more creditably connected with the press. Such is the gentleman upon

whom a blunder of the police, and the equally foolish action of the Bow Street magistrate, have brought all this serious inconvenience and annoyance. He was in Trafalgar Square faithfully discharging—as always—the duty laid upon him, a duty in itself by no means devoid of peril. He had been selected for that duty precisely on account of his high personal qualities, and because another member of our staff, after reporting the proceedings for many days, and becoming too well known to the agitators, had found his position so dangerous that he had asked the manager of this journal, as a particular favour, to be relieved from the task. In consequence of his conscientious reports of the speeches delivered, and unflinching performance of the public duties devolving upon him, this gentleman had on several occasions been threatened with personal violence.”

“Another Member of our Staff,” it may be explained, nevertheless, had the advantage of witnessing, without exception, the whole of the subsequent events which so much excited the country.

November 9 was very wet, and the threatened Socialist wreck of the Lord Mayor’s Show failed, although Trafalgar Square was not forgotten. But now we come to Sunday, November 13. Upon this memorable day the political clubs of London, representing the Radical element, had arranged to hold a meeting in Trafalgar Square—first, to call for the release of William O’Brien, the Irish patriot, and, secondly, to uphold the right of free meeting. The question had nothing to do with the unemployed, and had no direct connection with the previous disorderly

gatherings. It is possible that had the demonstration been permitted there would have been no disorder, but, on the other hand, the police would have had to permit the recurrence of the unemployed gatherings. They were determined to allow neither.

It may here be stated that there are many clubs in the metropolis, some of them recognized as resorts for the dissemination of political doctrines of rival parties. They are not to be confounded with the bogus clubs, which are merely betting dens, carried on in the teeth of the law. Against such places, which are prejudicial to the licensed victualler, and are condemned by the police, proceedings are now being taken whenever the law provides the opportunity. Besides these, and not very much superior to them, are the premises frequented by agitators who take advantage of periods of excited public feeling to press their propaganda.

On November 13, ostensibly, the frequenters of the genuine working-men's clubs were the leaders, their object being to protest, as they had many times protested before, in peaceable constitutional fashion. Few of their members, indeed, had seen for themselves the police tactics in Trafalgar Square. Of that we can bear testimony.

Sir Charles Warren must have imagined himself to have been campaigning in Africa. Police from all parts of the district, from remote villages in Surrey and Essex, and from town divisions, were alike called upon to assist in preserving order. Two thousand picked men lined the square, and on that side facing the south, they stood four deep. On the other sides they were two deep, having squads in reserve. Within

the enclosed area there were four strong bodies to strengthen any threatened point. At Scotland Yard, King Street, and other places, there were more men in reserve.

Every approach to the square was held by vedettes, supported by strong bodies of police in waiting. Meanwhile, from all four quarters of London, processions, with banners and brass bands, began to converge upon the square, augmenting in volume as they approached the forbidden ground.

The orders were to prevent any such procession from reaching the square. Consequently, at the entrance to Parliament Street, the contingents from the south and south-west were again and again charged by police with drawn batons. It was an unpleasant sight to observe the scenes of violence which were then perpetrated on both sides. Similar scenes were being simultaneously enacted in the Strand and in St. Martin's Lane.

Meanwhile, around the square, vast numbers of people had congregated, having slipped through the police lines.

Conflicts with the police ensued, and at four o'clock, Mr. Cunninghame Graham, M.P., Mr. John Burns, the Socialist, and Mrs. Besant advanced with their supporters upon the south-east corner of the square. The ranks of constables were for a moment broken, the reserves inside rallied to the support of the main body, and a score of troopers charged pell-mell into the fray. The wounded lay about after the encounter, as if it had been a skirmish in real warfare. Several arrests were made, Mr. Graham and Mr. Burns being carried prisoners into the middle of the square.

At this juncture, the Life Guards were called out, much against the desire of the police, excepting Sir Charles Warren, who gave the order, and three squadrons, each man with twenty rounds of ammunition, appeared. In their midst rode a police magistrate, ready to read the Riot Act, and a copy of this proclamation is here inserted :—

RIOT ACT, 1 Geo. 1st, cap. 5, sec. 2.

PROCLAMATION.

Silence having been commanded,

“ Our Sovereign Lady the Queen chargeth and commandeth all persons being assembled, immediately to disperse themselves, and peaceably to depart to their habitations or to their lawful business, upon the pains contained in the Act made in the first year of King George for preventing tumults and riotous assemblies.”

Fortunately the magistrate did not feel warranted in proceeding to this length, and after about a couple of hours' patrolling, the military withdrew, leaving the police to charge the loiterers in the side-streets after their custom.

From a return supplied to Parliament, it appears that seventy-seven policemen were injured on “ Bloody Sunday,” but only eight of these cases occurred in the square. The rest met with their wounds in Bridge Street, Westminster, and Westminster Bridge Road, or else in Charing Cross Road, St. Giles's, and Wellington Street, Strand. Constables suffered after the dispersal of the processions, in conflict with loiterers in Northumberland Avenue, chiefly at half-past four

p.m. A careful examination of this return, however, shows that many of the injuries were simple kicks or sprains. The more serious injuries resulted from blows from a life-preserver, a stick, stones, a buckle of a belt, and a piece of gas-piping disguised as a roll of paper, cuts also having been inflicted with a knife and a blunt instrument. Some policemen were hurt by being trampled by horses. On the other side of the balance-sheet, besides many cases at St. Thomas's, Westminster, and other hospitals, there were seventy-five civilians treated at Charing Cross Hospital in three hours. Many of these casualties were, no doubt, an inseparable consequence of a huge gathering, for on Jubilee Day, at the same institution, ninety-five cases were dealt with, and on that occasion there was no fighting.

There is still to be seen placarded in London the following notice:—

## “ TRAFALGAR SQUARE.

### “ POLICE REGULATIONS AND DIRECTIONS.

“ Whereas the holding of meetings and the passage of processions have caused, and are liable to cause, public tumult and disorder in Trafalgar Square, and have created, and are liable to create, obstruction in the streets and thoroughfares adjoining and leading thereto, I, Charles Warren, the Commissioner of Police of the Metropolis, for the prevention of such disorder and obstruction, pursuant to the powers vested in me by 2 & 3 Vict. cap. 47, and 7 & 8 Vict. cap. 60, make the following regulations, and give the following directions to the metropolitan police constables:—

" No meeting shall be allowed to assemble nor any person be allowed to deliver a public speech in Trafalgar Square, or in the streets or adjoining thoroughfares, or leading thereto.

" No organized procession shall be allowed to pass along the streets or adjoining thoroughfares or leading to Trafalgar Square.

" These regulations and directions are to continue in force until further notice.

" CHARLES WARREN,

*" Commissioner of Police of the Metropolis.*

" Metropolitan Police Office,

" 4, Whitehall Place,

" November 18, 1887."

Foiled in their attempt to reach the square, the metropolitan clubs resolved upon holding a meeting in Hyde Park, contenting themselves with making a formal demand to re-enter the square. But in order to be prepared for any contingency, the enrolment of special constables was decided upon, and Lieut.-Colonel Daniell in the Metropolitan District, with Major Smith in the City, forthwith set about carrying the decision into effect. It will be recollected that special constables are sworn in for the preservation of the public peace when disturbances are feared. The laws relative to their appointment were amended in 1831, 1835, and 1842. Louis Napoleon, afterwards emperor, aided as a special constable in London on April 10, 1848, when the Chartists proposed to hold a meeting of 200,000 men at Kennington Common, and to march in procession to Westminster, in order to present a petition to Parliament. On that occasion 150,000 persons of all ranks were appointed to act as



special constables. In 1867, in the fortnight following the explosion on December 13 at Clerkenwell House of Detention to release Fenian prisoners, about 30,000 were sworn in, much excitement having been caused by other attempted outrages. Instructions as to the organization of these volunteer police were issued in January, 1868, and on the 28th of that month 52,974 had been enrolled in the metropolis. Their services were not required, and they were dismissed by an order in March of the same year. They were allowed to keep their staves as mementoes. In some districts, on some occasions the specials performed ordinary police duty, and officers still in the force speak in the highest terms of their conduct. For the most part they were not called upon to make such a sacrifice of their leisure. Any householder is eligible, and the following is the oath :—

“ I, ———, do swear that I will well and truly serve our Sovereign Lady the Queen, in the office of special constable, for the parish of ———, without favour or affection, malice or ill-will ; and that I will, to the best of my power, cause the peace to be kept and preserved, and prevent all offences against the persons and properties of Her Majesty’s subjects ; and that while I continue to hold the said office, I will, to the best of my skill and knowledge, discharge all the duties thereof faithfully according to law. So help me God.”

The special, whatever modification may be decided, is liable to take ordinary police duty whenever called upon. He has, however, throughout the entire jurisdiction of the justices appointing him, all the powers, authorities, advantages, and immunities of any constable duly appointed, and he is subject to the same

responsibilities and duties. The justices may make regulations respecting the constables, and may remove any of them for misconduct or neglect of duty. Any person refusing to serve, or to obey lawful orders and directions, is liable to a penalty of £5, sickness or unavoidable accident being the only excuses admitted.

In 1887, each special was registered and provided with a card. He was afterwards supplied with an armlet and a truncheon, many batons having been borrowed from Liverpool, Glasgow, and Manchester. It may be mentioned here that the armlet is worn on the wrist to denote that a constable is on duty. Truncheons have varied in pattern from time to time. They are now made of cocus wood, and are concealed in a special pocket, instead of being openly displayed.

The regulations for the control of the specials, which were approved by Sir James Ingham, chief of the metropolitan magistrates, indicate the organization of the force. This new arm of the service, which remained embodied for two months, had its head-quarters in Craig's Court, and the expenses amounted to £1,485 1s. 9d. They were divided into four districts, and subdivided and lettered in correspondence with the existing divisions, the head-quarters of each being the chief police station. They were placed under commandants, who appointed superintendents and deputy superintendents, the latter having control of 5,000 men, assisted by an inspector, nominated by the constables, for every hundred. The constables, having been sworn in, had to report themselves at the police station to which they were attached, and to watch the "orders" for instructions.

On Sunday, November 20, accordingly, some 4,000 specials of all ranks of life, from the stripling clerk to the veteran who had served before, were drawn up in Trafalgar Square, to play at policemen. They had no work to do, for the theatre of operations was removed to the Park, where a gigantic demonstration was held, everything passing off quietly. But admittance to Trafalgar Square was sternly interdicted, and the question was removed to the law courts.

Although from time to time individuals have attempted to surprise the police, and politicians have devised Saturday "at homes," where conversation has taken the place of speeches, Trafalgar Square still remains closed to the orator.

Mr. Monro, in the autumn of 1888 and early part of 1889, showed that he would not be trifled with. From Clerkenwell Green the "unemployed" repeated their old tactics, but they had lost their novelty and obtained no notoriety, and thus they ended.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## SOME FORMS OF VICE.

Race-courses—Some swindlers—Got-up prize-fights—Running grounds  
—Dog races—How started—Prize-fighting—Police protected by  
pugilists — Theatres — Music halls — Dancing-rooms — Licensed  
victuallers.

**A**T large and popular gatherings where sports are pursued, there will be present more or less gambling; but you must go to a race-course to see it exhibited in all its varieties. It has many evil associations. A race meeting is the assembling ground for thieves, prize-fighters, forgers, passers of base coin and spurious notes, welshers, and rogues of every description, including three-card sharpers, thimble-riggers, practisers of "pricking the belt," billy-fair play, proprietors of wheels of fortune, skittles, the "man, monkey, and the wheel," and the "sporting tipster." There will also be found booths for eating, drinking, boxing, and, in short, everything that can be mentioned that is an incentive to, and cover for, gambling and thieving. Moreover, the great social evil is here present.

We will first visit the ring. Here we see dukes, duchesses, marquises, earls, lords and commoners, trainers, bookmakers, all mixed together. Of course

there are the paddock, Tattersall's, county stand, etc. When the bell rings for saddling, there is a Babel of bookmakers' voices, crying, "Two to one, bar one!" and "Six to four on the field!" each one trying to gather to his stand his customers, until the horses pass the winning post. To an observer, the stamp of ruin is apparent on the face of a reckless man, who has risked his own, his family's, or his employer's money in a fallacious hope of winning. Just look at the well-dressed, well-fed, badly educated, but successful bookmaker; he is all aglow, with no pity for the moths who have fluttered round his candle and have so terribly scorched their wings.

The bookmaker, his clerk, the tipster, and all connected with the betting fraternity, who make it the business of their lives, travel from race meeting to race meeting—in England to-day, in Scotland to-morrow. They live, and luxuriously too, out of those whom, in sporting phraseology, are termed the "mugs."

Again, observe the backer who may have drawn from the fielder a few five-pound notes. Watchful eyes are upon him, he is flattered on his success, he treats his friends all round, is not very particular about "flashing" the notes, and before the day is over his brain becomes cloudy. When he arrives home or at his lodgings, and becomes sensible enough to take stock of his possessions, he cannot find a note or a single "stiver" on his person. He has been obligingly relieved of them by some flash thief.

Stepping outside the rings among the mixed assembly, the same thing is going on, but on a lesser scale. There are bookmakers dressed in divers costumes, and coaches and carriages, and here, in the

interval between the races, the occupants are enjoying their luncheon, serenaded by a troupe of niggers, giving the latest sallies of the day. Mr. "Bones" is fraternizing with the footman, who seems enamoured with the melody, "Oh, feed us on our way," and is dispensing to the entertainers chicken and other dainties of the luncheon, with champagne. Close to another carriage is an acrobat, with two boys performing; there are gipsy fortune-tellers, performing dogs, the organ-grinder and his monkey, the harpist, violinist, and cornet-player, the genuine man of colour selling "tips," and numbers of other itinerants, each endeavouring to gain a few coppers.

In another spot we observe, hard at work, the card-sharper, down on his knees, working the cards on a folded top-coat or a rug, surrounded by a number of his own "pals," who are betting with the manipulator and winning until they get a "fly" into their spider's web, when of course he "nearly won, but didn't." Pricking the garter, or belt, is "worked" on all fours with three cards. It is an impossibility for an outsider to win. "Spinning the table" is an "un-square" game; the man who has charge of it is clever and calculating. The "firm"—his own friends—keep filling up spaces, but when a "mug" puts his sovereign on a white horse the whole of the vacant spaces are instantly filled by the "trotter's" companions, the needle is spun, and, needless to say, it never stops in favour of an outsider. Although the man in charge of the table does not appear to interfere, he can govern the vane to a nicety with his knee.

Let us next visit the man with his "monkey and wheel." This is rather a clever fraud. The man

stands on a raised platform with his wheel and monkey. His wheel contains a quantity of balls, each of which bears a number. The operator commences business by the sale of tickets at one shilling each, thirty of which must be sold, as the prize is thirty shillings. Each purchaser puts his hand into a bag and takes out a ticket. Eighteen out of the thirty-six ticket-holders are the man's own "pals," one of whom contrives to let him see his number. All being in readiness, the wheel is spun, the man desires "Jenny," the monkey, to dip her paw into the machine. She takes out a ball, and hands it to the banker. He instantly calls out the number which was communicated to him by his confederate; he hands the ball back to the monkey, and she quickly drops it into the wheel. The man and his friends have thus netted eighteen shillings on the draw. It is almost certain there was no such number as the one supposed on the ball. This is practised daily, and large sums have been known to be made by the gang. As the ringleader was scarcely at one race ever known to win himself, this fact ultimately led to his apprehension and conviction. It was noticed by plain clothes officers that, as he was always paying out, it was an impossibility for that game to last, and they concluded that there must be roguery somewhere.

Of course there are other knavish tricks performed by the man, monkey, and wheel, equally as clever as the one mentioned. All these sharks and pike of the racing fraternity are drawn to one common centre—the racing field. Detectives and police officers in uniform are sent in numbers from other parts of the country, and they are well acquainted with the

swindlers of their own districts. In conjunction with the local police, they are indefatigable in their efforts for the protection of the general public, and they prevent, as far as possible, the crime which, it can be foreseen, would be the inevitable result of so motley a concourse.

After the races are ended, and during the breaking up of the vast assembly, the confusion with which the officers have to cope almost beggars description. There is, perhaps, a whisper abroad that a prize-fight between two noted champions is about to "come off." The gentleman "mugs" are the "marks" aimed at, and numbers of them are drawn to witness the brutalizing sight. But what is the upshot? All persons possessed of valuables are roughly handled; they are "bonneted," robbed of money, watch and chain, rings, pins, in fact, every portable article; and what can they do? Nothing; they don't like to speak of their loss, so have to put up with it.

To leave the higher field of sport and vice for "running grounds," we find the lower orders patronizing rabbit-coursing, dog-racing, pigeon-shooting, man-racing, pigeon-flying, rat-worrying, and other games, as well as "meg-flying," pitch and toss, the three cards, jenny-spinning, dice, and all sharpening practices in which fraud and roguery predominate. To a person who has never before witnessed the tricks of the low-comedy men assembling at these grounds, the revelation would go far beyond his conception of the vice and fraud that it is possible to be practised. An illustration of two or three of the methods as employed may not be amiss.

In a field there are at times three "rings" at work,



playing at pitch and toss—the “gold,” the “silver,” and the “copper.” Let us watch the gold ring. There may be thirty sovereigns on the ground; when the main has been distributed, three or four sovereigns have been wanting. The man “heading” the coins is called the spinner; when the money falls, every one is anxious to see either “heads or tails.” One rogue who is trying to “do a bit for himself” has a piece of fat mixed with resin stuck upon one of his boots—he knows how and where to place his foot when looking at the coins as they fall; he walks backwards, and waits for an opportunity to raise his foot behind him and transfer the adhering sovereign from the boot to his pocket. A fellow was once caught at this game; he was instantly seized by the legs, and about twenty sovereigns were shaken out of his clothing.

The starters for a dog handicap are sometimes men with wooden legs; they stick the stump into the ground, take hold of the dog by the tail, the animal and man are extended at full stretch in a line with the rabbit which is about to be let loose. The word “go” is given; the dogs are off, and the men with wooden legs are sprawling on the ground. In other instances dogs are started differently, but there is roguery attached to it all. Very frequently the day’s proceedings wind up at one of these “sports” with a rough encounter between two local champions who have thrown out to each other, by innuendo, a challenge on different occasions. Who shall say there is not plenty of work on this field for the police?

During the present century, hundred of battles have been fought in what is termed the “prize-ring,”

and the police have had, on many occasions, great difficulties to contend with at these assemblies. In all densely populated towns there is sure to be found the professional "bruiser," or "prize-fighter." It is not from pugilists themselves the police have anything to fear. They are usually good-tempered and well-behaved; but the troubles are created when a fight "comes off," as everything is so arranged by those who are "in the know" to have the twenty-four feet ring erected in a place as little likely to court the observation of the police or magisterial interference as possible. Let this matter be kept as secret as may be, thieves and blackgards of the very lowest description are found to be present in force.

A farmer, upon whose land the ring may be planted, has been often made to pay for entering his own field. People have been "bonneted" and robbed of everything they have about them; even their coats have been stripped off and taken away. Public-houses have been pillaged, shops have been ransacked, and the law has been entirely set at defiance. These remarks do not in the least refer to the prize-fighters, or the "old constables of the ring," as they were termed. It is only fair to say that these men have been known to protect persons from violence at the hands of thieves. In years gone by, prize "milling" meant, with few exceptions, a trial of skill, hardihood, perseverance, and real courage. Battles were fought according to settled, arbitrary rules. It was on account of the violence, blackguardism, and robbery which sprang up that justices in quarter sessions, in various counties, spoke strongly against these unlawful gatherings to witness brutal exhibitions of skill.

The police were instructed to use all means in their power to suppress prize-fighting, and very tough work they had for a time. Once, in the course of duty, the writer received protection from a pugilist, who was stripped and in fighting costume, having fought some eight or nine rounds. The usual attempt at secrecy was observed; on this occasion the chief actors, with their immediate supporters, had travelled as a "blind" on omnibuses, with hampers of pigeons and men displaying guns, as though they were going to a pigeon-shooting match—in fact, they did shoot pigeons for a time, near to where a twenty-four feet ring was erected. The police got to know something of the proceedings; not far from the ring four constables were stationed in a plantation. The principals with their seconds entered the ring, and eight or nine rounds were fought before the police made their appearance. They rushed to the ring, and there was a stampede, the company leaving the ropes, stakes, water-bottles, towels, sponges, etc., on the field. One of the principals was apprehended before he succeeded in reaching a conveyance. He offered no resistance, and, undoubtedly, the officer would have been badly injured by the crowd who rushed to rescue the prisoner from custody, if the man had not called out to them that the policeman was only doing his duty. He would not see him injured, he meant to go quietly, and at the same time he knocked two or three men down.

As he was stripped, he was taken to a farmhouse, where he borrowed some clothing, and he was allowed to return to his home. This man fought several prize battles, and won most of them. He became a pub-

lican ; he still keeps a licensed house, and is doing well.

However well conducted a theatre may be, there is nevertheless a necessity for the presence of the police ; for here, as in all other places, persons of questionable character rub shoulders with legitimate playgoers. Some of the larger theatres are regularly attended by police officers. In London, one hundred police are engaged in this duty nightly. Minor theatres, music-halls, and singing saloons, when properly conducted, are not objectionable places of amusement. The working population who cannot afford the expense of going to a high-class entertainment, and probably would not enjoy it, listen to a sentimental or a comic song or witness a "breakdown" with zest which gives relief to their daily labour. The police, both in uniform and plain clothes, are on the alert to prevent any breach of the peace which might occur when the audience disses. It not unfrequently happens that arrests are made at places of entertainment of persons wanted by the police for either grave or minor offences. All places of amusement are closely watched by the police, and very properly so, as some theatrical companies and their followers are not as respectable as could be wished, and it is known that sometimes they have very undesirable connections. In London, the renewal of music and dancing licenses has depended very much upon the favourable report of the visiting inspector which was presented to the justices at the sessions, and this was no light responsibility.

A word now may be said of the duties of the police

towards the publicans. Licensed victuallers, beer-house-keepers (licensed to sell on or off the premises), keepers of refreshment houses, and, in fact, of all places where intoxicating liquors are sold are under the supervision of the police. The law, as at present framed, is stringent enough, if properly carried out. The licensed victualer by some is a much-abused man. Some people think because he is a publican, it follows that he must be a sinner. But the law legitimizes his trade, and, like any other business man, he invests his capital in it, and of course does his best to insure a fair return. A publican who endeavours to conduct his or her place with propriety, and in obedience to the enactment provided, is as much entitled to the protection of the police as any other class of tradesmen.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## FIRE !

Relations between the police and brigades in the metropolis—Some acts of bravery—Telephonic communication—How brigades are composed in the country—A harvest for pickpockets—Don't drink—A courageous rescue—The use of sand.

**F**IRE has an alarming sound for everybody. To the police officer it means a call to duty of the most arduous kind ; a sudden and startling interruption upon his ordinary work. In this chapter, we shall dismiss the metropolis with a few words, because in London the Metropolitan Fire Brigade, commanded by Captain Shaw, C.B., rarely require the assistance of the police as regular firemen, the responsibility of the constables and their officers being confined to keeping the streets in the vicinity of a conflagration free for the operations of the brigade. This duty is not unattended with danger, and there are many opportunities for the display of presence of mind and of courage. On the average, each man of the nine thousand available for street duty has, in the course of the year, to witness at least two, and perhaps three, fires.

The Metropolitan and City Police are in direct

telegraphic communication with the head-quarters of the Fire Brigade in Southwark Street, and frequently with district stations. Thus, both systems are closely connected, although actually independent; that is, so far as the metropolis is concerned. In the provinces there are different methods pursued.

In some towns, brigades are composed entirely of police officers, chosen from the force, after extra drill for that particular duty; others are formed of police and mechanics; and some are made up of mechanics only, who have to repair to the fire station when an alarm is given. At the head-quarters of the Metropolitan Fire Brigade there may occasionally be seen candidates for the post of chief constable undergoing training by Captain Shaw, the chief officer, to fit themselves for their probable duties, a knowledge of the practical work of fire extinction now being demanded of the heads of police in many boroughs.

It is false economy that dictates the employment in some places of a small and utterly incompetent brigade, whose horses are contracted for, and which, in case of alarm, have to be brought from a livery stable, unyoked from cabs, or else collected from wherever the contractor can find them, and then brought to the fire station to draw an obsolete and ancient engine, worked by hand, with hose for the most part rotten, and all appliances of an antiquated type.

Every constable who works a beat is expected to know the situation of all the fire-plugs upon it. On pay-days, and when the police are assembled for drill, the head of the establishment or the next in command, at a moment's notice, will call upon a constable to give an account of the number and situation of his fire-

plugs. When a fire occurs at night-time and in winter, which is not unusual, if snow is on the ground the policeman clears it away and shows by the light of his lamp the place, ready for the fixing of the stand-pipe when the brigade arrives. More police as well as the firemen are quickly on the scene, and the former draw a cordon round the spot where the engines are working, to prevent their action and that of the brigade being impeded by the crowd. Here presents itself a grand opportunity for the light-fingered "gentry" to reap a harvest. Persons with their heads thrown back, their attention being absorbed in watching the progress of the flames, are "marks" for a pickpocket's operations. The detective officers have to exercise their vigilance to defeat the thieves. A cry is often heard of "Stop thief!" and the rogue finds himself stopped by, and in the arms of, a supposed civilian, but who is in reality a detective.

When a constable on patrol discovers that a house is on fire, he does not await the arrival of the fire brigade, but promptly acts to the best of his judgment, and not unfrequently succeeds in rescuing one or more of the inmates from an untimely and painful death. If he sees smoke arising, he at once arouses the occupants, assists in putting out the fire and in saving valuables, and these timely measures being taken, there is often prevented what might have culminated in a serious conflagration. In fact, many deeds of real heroism are performed as acts of duty, and they go unrecognized and unrewarded, except by the inward satisfaction which all good and useful actions afford to the doers. Policemen and firemen should alike refrain from the use of intoxicants; it only raises false courage, and,



whilst it gives temporary strength, it obscures the judgment and promotes rash and hasty conduct. At times when a fire is of long duration, food and some beverage are absolutely essential to the workers, but let them be wholesome and non-intoxicant.

The knowledge of the practice and methods of managing a fire-escape is as important a feature in the training of a fire brigade as the working of a steam engine or of a manual. The men allotted to the escape should, if possible, be athletes, and almost gymnasts. Their muscular power and capabilities for climbing; their ability to look down from a height; to carry, swing, and bear persons on their backs, shoulders, or under their arms, should be great. Many lives, especially of women and children, are annually saved by the judicious management of a fire-escape.

A fire-escape is not always at hand. On a winter's night, between eleven and twelve o'clock, some years ago, an alarm that a fire had broken out in a woollen-drapeer's establishment was given by an officer on duty, who observed flames to be issuing from the lower part of the building. The owner of the property, who was also occupier, usually slept on the premises. His wife was dead; his two children and housekeeper resided with him. The police officer immediately tried to arouse the inmates, and two children came screaming to the window of the room above the burning shop. No one else was in the house, the master and the housekeeper being absent. Immediate action was imperative. The officer reached the room by clambering up the spout; he smashed and climbed into the window in time to lower the children to the crowd below. The fire had now spread to the floor. The

officer, to save himself, got out of the window, and hung by his hands until a ladder was brought, and he was rescued from his perilous position. He was much burnt and cut; the floor fell into the roaring fire below soon after he had quitted the room. One of the children had her arm broken.

A fire once broke out in the basement of a large establishment, where, in addition to other goods, paraffin was sold, which was kept in a cellar. Some buildings were in course of erection not far distant; and at the time when the writer arrived on the scene, two carts were passing, conveying sand for mixing with the lime to be used at the buildings. I induced the cart-men to tip up the sand near to a window which opened into the cellar of the building on fire. I went down into the cellar, and helpers followed; they soon beat a retreat, stifled and overcome by the heat. The sand was shovelled in from outside, and I covered up the paraffin casks with it. By this time the fire brigade had arrived, and began playing on the flames. For a time I was lost sight of, but eventually was found on the floor of the cellar, insensible and much blistered. I was drawn out and conveyed home, a doctor was sent for, and for some weeks I was under his care. The last thing I remembered was trying to find my way to the staircase leading from the cellar, but all appeared to be a mist before me, my powers failed, and I fell. The fire was overcome and the building saved. Considerable damage was done, but the sand heaped upon and around the casks of paraffin had been effectual; thus doubtless a whole street was saved from destruction. I was commended by the public and rewarded. It is most desirable that friendly relations should exist

between the brigades, however composed, whether distinct or mixed, and the police, for each can assist the other, and as they are both working for the public weal, one common bond should unite them.

Before leaving this subject, we may say it was a matter of great regret that, owing to some inexplicable misunderstanding, the first parade of the Metropolitan firemen at the Horse Guards before the Prince and the Princess of Wales was, in a spectacular point of view, a lamentable failure. It certainly reflected discredit upon the London County Council. To some critics the incident provided an argument for the wisdom of leaving the police in the hands of the Home Secretary ; but others contended that the fiasco would have been impossible had the Metropolitan force been under municipal control.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## COMMON LODGING-HOUSES.

Nomadic population—"Sanctimonious bard"—"Universal curer"—  
 "Constitution keeper"—"Irish busker"—"Dry-land Jacks"—  
 "Sitting mumpers"—Other frequenters—"Padding kens," "doss-  
 ing cribs," etc.—A wife murderer arrested—Smart detection—Child-  
 ren in lodging-houses—A queer customer—A summons-server  
 nonplused—Where broken food is taken—Indiscriminate alms-  
 giving Model lodging-houses—Police supervision—Whitechapel  
 and Westminster—"Doubles"—The Act of 1851.

NO unimportant feature in our social arrangements is the common lodging-house, the "home" known to a wandering population, of whose numbers no really correct estimate can be made. The destitute persons who are unable to provide the requisite pence for shelter in a common lodging-house are compelled to seek refuge in the casual ward of the poor-house, or to skulk into some shed, or else sleep under a haystack. If found in such a place they become liable to imprisonment as vagrants "having no visible means of subsistence." They are not usually the regular bred-and-born tramps, who never knew any other life, and whose sole occupation is the wandering from town to town, begging their way, and communicating to each other intelligence useful to them, as to the towns to be visited and to be avoided.

The branch of the nomadic population who may be discovered in the common lodging-house—so called because of its large common room or “kitchen”—includes petty thieves of every description, pavement or causeway artists, in their own language called “cadgers sreeving,” manufacturers of spurious soap, oils, and of many other deceptive commodities, the true value of which the cheated purchasers quickly ascertain to their cost. These latter, in their own slang, are described as “gammy vendors.”

The street musician, whose instrument is a penny tin whistle, selects a quiet neighbourhood, the inhabitants of which he can annoy by the discordant sounds he is an adept at producing. To get rid of him, he is given money which could be much better expended. This professional is known by the cognomen of the “sanctimonious bard.” Then, again, there is the “universal curer,” eradicator of corns, remover of warts, and healer, in short, of all diseases to which flesh is heir. The sole purpose of this man’s nostrums is to bring grist to his purse at the outset of his career. As he advances, he ignores the common lodging-house; and when he arrives at the dignity of having a settled home, he becomes an acknowledged quack doctor. Prior to this elevation, however, he is designated a “constitution keeper.”

Next comes to our view “Patrick O’Flynn.” He remains indoors during the day, studying his pieces in preparation for the evening’s work. His get-up in Irish costume is perfect, and, with his blackthorn, he visits public-houses, where he sings Irish songs and gives Irish comic recitations. With the aid of his stick, he amuses and excites his audience, who, as a

rule, reward him freely, and his day's earnings are pretty profitable. He is known as the "Irish busker."

The disabled seaman is not as frequently personated as formerly; he has given place to persons whose occupation better accords with the times. Yet there are still a few on the road. These are the "dry-land Jacks;" but in the Midlands the most frequent appeals to sympathy are by persons who really are, or who represent themselves to be, sufferers from pit explosions and mill accidents. They are to be seen sitting on a piece of waste ground, near a much-frequented corner. There are generally two in company, each exhibiting a piece of white linen, supposed to be bandaged round the stump of an arm or leg. If not removed by the police, they dine out, and remain from morning until night at the same spot; and they are, in consequence, named "sitting mumpers."

There are also to be found in common lodging-houses, hawkers and pedlars of every description---mousetrap "builders," skewer-makers, lace-workers, fire-paper cutters, paper-flower makers, ring-puzzle manufacturers, as well as many other itinerant folk. What a medley of shifts, duplicity, coarseness, and low cunning is here assembled! In "flash" language, the resorts are described, not as lodging-houses, but "padding kens," "dossing cribs," "snoozing jugs," "cadgers' covers," "tourist cabins," and "buskers' retreats." The supervision of these houses is a great help to the police, who are empowered to visit them at uncertain periods and at their own discretion. The police officer in the country, if not to the same extent in the metropolis, is careful to maintain a friendly understanding with the owner or manager of the dwell-

ings, whose hints frequently materially assist him in the ultimate detection of "persons wanted."

An officer of police who was performing detective duty once passed some days and nights in various common lodging-houses, assuming the garb and appearance of a vagrant, until he successfully directed a brother-officer in the apprehension of a man wanted for a cruel murder, the ruffian having beaten out his wife's brains and then made his escape. This detective slept in a bed adjoining, and "spotted" his man when he undressed, by a large blue mark extending from the knee to the ankle, caused by an explosion in a coal mine. The prisoner was tried, found guilty, and executed.

Among the inmates of a common lodging-house there was also found, by the same officer, a family whose real misfortune aroused his compassion. It consisted of the father and mother, with their three or four children. The past history of the parents had been respectable; they had been reduced to poverty by misfortune. Unversed in the ways of the world, simple-minded, and honest, they accepted present circumstances, and tried to make the best of them. The officer, discerning traits in the man that told him he was not speaking to a criminal, said pleasantly to him—

"Where do you come from, my man? And what are you?"

"Well, sir," was the answer, "I am a hard-working man. Work was very scarce. We thought it might get better, and so stayed on in our own place, until everything we had was sold by degrees, and we had to turn out seeking bread. I get a day's work

now and then, where I can, and will settle again, I hope, as soon as I get constant employment."

"Well, could you not have left the children in the care of relatives or friends until you had got some fixed abode?"

"You see, sir," was the reply, "they are very young, and I thought I would stick to them myself as long as I could. We don't like to separate, and I may be fortunate enough to get a bit of a home together again, and as the children grow older they can do something."

The baneful influences and surroundings of the lodging-house already described were not so likely to contaminate the man and his wife, who had arrived at maturity in totally different circumstances; but the very novelty of the scenes and characters must have acted on the quicker perceptions and on the minds of the children, and have implanted ideas that were morally poisonous in their results.

In contrast to the straightforward way in which the man already mentioned answered the queries of the police officer, a downcast, vicious-looking fellow, sitting by himself, when asked the question, "Where is your home?" replied, "Sweatham."

"And where is that?"

"Oh, in the parish of Nevermindum."

"What trade are you?"

"Striker to a needlemaker," was the blunt response.

This behaviour was quite sufficient to convince the officer that further inquiry was useless. Two officers had been visiting in company on this occasion, and, after leaving, the following dialogue occurred between



them : "What about that fellow in the corner?" "I should say he is worth keeping one's eye on." "Let it be done! And what about the man with the children?" "Oh, I think we ought to send for him, and give him one of those four-pound tins of corned beef we have in store." "I quite agree," said the superior officer ; "let that be done."

In less than twenty-four hours the surly customer was arrested and convicted for stealing from an entrance-hall a gentleman's top-coat.

On one occasion, not long ago, an inspector of police made a visit to one of these common lodging-houses, and noticing a room occupied by a man and his "wife," the officer claimed admittance. The door was locked, and the tenant, being indignant at the intrusion, refused point-blank to open it. The officer calmly but firmly gave the occupant to understand that he was under the roof of a duly registered common lodging-house, and must comply with the rules which were hung up in the room. The door was thereupon opened. The officer entered, and was received with a volley of abuse and bad language. The man was a licensed hawker ; his name was taken, and a summons was issued and served upon him. On the day for hearing, the defendant did not put in an appearance. Service of summons was proved, and a warrant was granted for his arrest. The officer who had made the complaint went to the lodging-house to execute the warrant. On entering the room, he found facing him a pair of old trousers, stuffed with straw and placed upright. On the back part of them was pinned the summons, upon which was written in red ink, in a good bold hand, "Ta, ta! Suddenly called

away." The summons is preserved as a memento; the delinquent has not been traced. The officer did not take possession of the man's certificate, neither did he see where it had been granted, otherwise he might have been "blocked" in a day or two; but not much trouble was taken to find him.

Cane-bottomed chair repairers, umbrella-menders (mushroom fakers), and scissor-grinders nearly always live in common lodging-houses; and when called upon, in nine cases out of every ten, they produce a pedlar's certificate. Pigs are invariably kept by the common lodging-house keeper in the country, and they are all well-to-do pigs, being excellently well fed. If we look into the sty, we shall see some fat and ready for the butcher, and others fast progressing to the same condition. We will raise the lid of the pig-tub, and what do we find? Bread, meat, and food of every description, which have been given in mistaken charity to beggars at the door by pitying people and their servants—good food, of which the professional tramp, having collected from half a stone to fourteen pounds in his rounds (as well as money), sells to the lodging-house keeper for his pigs. Then for his own enjoyment he what is called "swings the pan," and regales himself with beef-steak, with a good supply of fried onions, vegetables, and bread, and washed down by large draughts of home-brewed ale, frequently followed by something stronger. So lives from day to day the professional cadger, honest toil of any description being to him entirely out of the question.

Abundant scope for the exercise of truly benevolent and charitable acts lies near to our homes, among the people who are, or ought to be, known to us—aged poor,

sick poor, orphan children, the employed who at times receive scanty remuneration, the unemployed who would gladly work if they could get it.

It is not the persistently clamorous and frequently saucy beggar at the door who is the real sufferer. Honest poverty does not loudly importune; on the contrary, it frequently endures much privation without complaint, and presents as far as possible a decent appearance to the world. Some of the *dainties* hidden in the cadger's bundle would be very acceptable to many an appetite, stinted in its choice and supply of food. Many attempts have been made to put down vagrancy, but the evil is very difficult to deal with. The public itself is greatly to blame that the police find the common lodging-houses crammed with such pests of society. Some of our noted novelists and caricaturists have visited tramps' lodging-houses with the writer, and viewed the scenes he has described, and which reveal much of the shady side of our national life.

In large towns, the system is much the same as in the country, only the lodging-house keeper does not keep a piggery attached to his dwelling. In most towns of importance there are model lodging-houses for the accommodation of single men. They are built at the expense of private individuals or of a duly registered company. These houses are a great boon to artisans and labouring men, and are placed under the control of a manager. Persons take up their abode in them for long or short periods. There is every convenience requisite for comfort. The rooms are clean and healthy, the bed comfortable, and the lodger has a cupboard, with lock and key.

The police visit these establishments, as they do the common lodging-houses, at irregular intervals, but rarely do they detect in them criminals "wanted," or chance upon any cause for complaint.

We have spoken, so far, of common lodging-houses as they exist in the country generally. Those of the metropolis are not on the whole dissimilar, for a considerable percentage of their inmates are wandering folk, and, when not living in a London "doss house," are to be found "on the tramp." Nevertheless, there are wretched outcasts who never get out of the whirlpool, and step by step they sink to the most degraded life; these wrecks of humanity seem to find their level in the lodging-houses either of Whitechapel, or of Peter Street, Westminster. So long as their pence are forthcoming to pay the deputy, they may occupy what by courtesy is known as a "room." There is no credit; if they cannot pay for their bed, they must turn out into the streets, and numbers of people are driven to such straits.

The series of diabolical murders and mutilations which, in the summer and autumn of 1888, took place in Spitalfields and Whitechapel, directed the full glare of publicity upon the tenants of the common lodging-houses which there abound. In every case the victim belonged to the class of women whose vice obtains for them, at most, a few pence daily, the greater part of which is spent in drink. One woman only, Janet Kelly, who was done to death in her room in Dorset Street, belonged to a slightly superior class; all the others lived from hand to mouth, a precarious existence, and they were best known in Flower and Dean Street, Thrawl Street, and Dorset Street, the lodging-house quarter.

Flower and Dean Street and Thrawl Street will soon be entirely rebuilt. Dorset Street already boasts lodging-houses of the improved type—that is to say, they will be erected specially with that purpose in view. The other streets contain houses put up more than a century since, when Spitalfields was the centre of a silk trade, and the weavers sat in their upper rooms busy at work, by the full light of the large arched windows. These long windows are now the only indications that the industry once flourished in the district. Under the regulations set down by law, the houses, about ten years since, were carefully measured, and the police take good care that the cubic allowance, 300 feet to each inmate, shall not be encroached upon, and that careless owners shall not neglect to limewash their premises. There is also an inspection, undertaken at uncertain times—perhaps twice a week—to detect breaches of the rules, and to discover if any infectious cases have not been reported. The police also see that a ticket, stating the authorized number of beds, is conspicuously displayed, and they are supposed to take care that the “doubles” are occupied by married couples only. A “double” is a bed large enough for two persons, placed in an otherwise unfurnished compartment, separated from other doubles by a partition, reaching neither to the floor nor to the roof, so, at the best, ventilation is secured at the expense of privacy. Eightpence per night is the charge for a double, and fourpence for a single bed, Sundays not being charged to regular lodgers. Not so many years ago the minimum rate was threepence, but one deputy raised it to fourpence, with the result that it soon became general.

A deputy is a man or woman who, frequently assisted by a night watchman, has the control of the place for the proprietor, whose name and address have to be registered. This landlord may have to pay a heavy rent to the ground landlord. It is hard to trace the real ownership of the property, but some say that a City church owes its endowment largely to the source of income which certain East End lodging-houses provide.

Some lodging-houses are registered for women only, others for men only, and the remainder have accommodation for both sexes, as described. A tenement of three floors, and apparently of small dimensions, often holds seventy to eighty sleepers, and there is no need to add that most of the back "rooms" are so dark that a candle in the daytime is a necessity. There are large undertakings which provide for as many as 350 lodgers.

Owing to the clearances which have been made in the Drury Lane district and in the Borough, the Spitalfields and Whitechapel quarters have become still more thickly populated. In the H or Whitechapel division alone, there are 6,000 people who every night pay their pence to the deputies of 127 lodging-houses. It is obvious that a few policemen charged with that duty can maintain a very superficial observation only of this population. It is enough if they succeed in enforcing the clauses of the Common Lodging-houses Act of 1851. This Act prescribes it to be an offence to harbour thieves, or to permit them to assemble; but no systematic suppression of this class is attempted, nor in London is it possible, when the police force is numerically inadequate to the work. When a watch

is stolen, and there is reason to suppose that the thief has secreted himself in a lodging-house, then a search is conducted, but generally not with much satisfaction to the loser of the property, for jewellery has a strange knack of disappearing in these haunts. There is no gainsaying that the construction of the houses, their darkness, and the fact that they are always open, except between the hours of two or three a.m. and five a.m., when the great common kitchens are cleared, are so many facilities for easy concealment of law-breakers.

In the whole of London there are not less than 959 houses under control, to accommodate 31,381 lodgers (*vide* Report, 1888). There is a special branch for the transaction of this business in Scotland Yard, but the routine work is chiefly in the hands of the local sergeants. A number of non-registered houses are periodically visited to enforce the Act. During twelve months, three keepers of registered houses were convicted for infringements of the regulations. Fifteen cases of infectious disease occurred. Largely owing to the vigilance of the police, a steady improvement has for some years been quietly going on in the condition and management of London common lodging-houses.

## CHAPTER XIX.

## IN THE STREETS.

The traffic of London\*—Accidents—Privileged cabs—"Crawlers"—Public carriage department—Regulations and inspection—Licensing—Drivers—Test questions—"Poor Man's Corner"—"California"—Lost articles restored—Pirate 'buses—Some tricks—Costermongers—Michael Angelo Taylor's Act—Mad dogs—Runaway horses—"Smoke Jacks"—Weights and measures—Fraudulent tradesmen—Warnings to the public.

**I**N the consideration of a policeman's duty in the streets, we turn, naturally, to some account of the traffic of the greatest city in the world—London. So immense is its volume, and so narrow are the arteries, that much guidance is needed from the three hundred experienced constables who direct the vehicular currents into right channels. At the movement of a gloved hand, a stream of cabs, 'buses, carts, waggons, barrows, drays, gigs, traps, carriages—in fact, every variety of conveyance upon four wheels or two suddenly comes to a standstill, just to allow a lady to pass! The lady has as much right to passage-way as the owner of the proudest horseflesh, and it is on this principle that the policeman acts—everybody in turn. To this rule there are two exceptions. By courtesy, priority is given to royalty, as may be seen in the height of



the season in Rotten Row ; and, by urgency, place is accorded to the fire engine, as it is driven along the streets at break-neck speed, literally panting for the fray.

There is wear and tear upon the policeman's temper, and there is need for constant display of tact. His difficulties may be increased by snow, frost, fog, or, what is worse than all, the contractor. Authorized either by gas company, water company, telegraph department, telephone company, parish surveyor, Board of Works, or other of the miscellaneous bodies who have a legal right to block up one-half of the public roadway, the contractor aforesaid is a terrible fellow. Invariably, apparently, he selects for his work a season when traffic is greatest, and the wood or asphalte pavement always wants renewing when the time is most inconvenient. Of course, neither stone, nor tar, nor timber will for ever stand the ceaseless roll of wheels and the patter of horseshoes, and thus pretty regularly the policeman finds his duties encumbered by the obstacles of repairs.

In consequence of the narrowed space at command, drivers cannot avert collisions, and the liability to accidents increases. So common are they, that absolutely they pass unrecorded, save in the police returns; and from this source we learn that over 4,500 persons are annually maimed or injured in the streets, and nearly 150 are run over and killed. This is a fact to justify the nervousness which many strangers have in crossing the roadway. It is possible some of the most timid would never get across without the help of the kindly policeman. Undoubtedly, the constable who is on traffic duty in London is the most appreciated

member of the force. His politeness is beyond question, and his self-command admirable.

Cabs and light carts are the principal dangers. Fire engines, with all their rapidity and bustle, were responsible for four accidents only in one year. A person run over by a cab is not so frequently mortally injured as the person who has got beneath the wheels of a van or 'bus. One reason why cabs are so dangerous is that the drivers are occasionally careless; and another explanation is that there too many of them, so that there is not room for them on the standings, and they are compelled to "crawl" along the streets at a pace which is often a trap to the unthinking pedestrian, who may unconsciously be overtaken by the driver of the hansom.

The cabmen of London say that an end would be put to "crawling" if privileged cabs were abolished. Privileged cabs are those which, on the payment of a penny, are admitted into railway termini or adjacent yards or "fields." The companies cling to the system, as it is supposed to guarantee in some measure the safety of passengers' luggage lying about the platforms, if only privileged cabmen are allowed access to the premises. Non-privileged cabmen are termed "Bluchers." It has been estimated that a daily traffic in London in the most congested thoroughfares, amounting to a total of 66,000 miles, is travelled for nothing, every cab fruitlessly journeying six miles a day in search of fares.

The danger does not tend to diminish, for although the stands now extend to about twenty-four miles in length, the licensed cabs, if ranked in line, would reach over forty-five miles. About twenty miles of homeless

cabs are therefore always on the move, and they loiter in thoroughfares already sufficiently congested. They will be found in constant procession in Fleet Street, whilst not one will be seen on the Thames Embankment. After dark, the C and E divisions, in which are situated most of the theatres, will be crowded to such a degree that no empty cab is permitted, after a certain hour, to re-enter the Strand. Cabmen will often invite pedestrians to have a free ride, in order to run the gauntlet of the watchful police. Piccadilly Circus, Trafalgar Square, and vicinity are becoming just as difficult to deal with as the Strand, and it is computed that when the theatres close at eleven, the music-halls shortly before midnight, and the public-houses half an hour later, not less than 20,000 people are brought into the streets. A large proportion remain to promenade on the south side of Piccadilly Circus, and the result is disorder, in the suppression of which the police do not always receive the support of the public.

The isolated building in the middle of Great Scotland Yard is given up to the public carriage department, the licensing of which is committed to the commissioner, the office of registration of metropolitan public carriages having been consolidated with that of the commissioner by the Act of 1850. Other Acts have since been passed. The department is in the charge of Mr. Ware, who takes deep interest in his work. Licenses are renewable yearly, and of one sort and another they number just upon 14,000, about half being for hansom cabs, and the rest being for "four-wheelers," stage carriages, and tram-cars. Of late years there has been a marked improvement in the style and build of cabs, and in the design of omnibuses, which are now

nearly all provided with cross-seats on the roof, the old "knife-board" being almost a thing of the past. About 1,500 new vehicles are brought into use annually. Three hundred rejections are made, the result of the inspection not being satisfactory. To ensure that the conveyances shall be kept in proper condition, officers make night inspections at uncertain intervals.

In superintending this branch of licensing, the police have no light duty to perform. They have also to inspect standings for hackney carriages. From time to time there are new ones to be added, or the sites of old ones changed. The duty of appointing cab-stands is a very difficult one, inasmuch as, while desiring the convenience, no one wants the inconvenience; and in busy and crowded streets or roads, accommodation for a rank cannot well be placed without causing serious obstruction.

Licenses have also to be issued to drivers and conductors, an army of over 27,500 strong. There are more drivers than hackney carriages.

The temptation to drive a cab in London appears to be irresistible. Two thousand applications for licenses are made every year, chiefly by coachmen, grooms, horse-keepers, and others having some knowledge of the management of horses. Some of the drivers are over seventy years of age, and there are six veterans over eighty; a fair percentage are over sixty.

Before they are granted a license, they have not only to bring two certificates of character, but have to satisfy the police that they can read and write, and know the topography of London. There are one or two catch questions used in the oral examination which is

held. Thus the candidate is asked how many Gloucester Roads he can indicate on the map, and where Nelson Square or Albert Square may be.

Once on the road, however, a cabman may be trusted to find his way—that is the general experience. Ignorance of London is not the cabman's failing—more frequently it is the temptation to drink. In one year over a thousand drivers were convicted of this charge. There is also the temptation to drive wantonly, to be guilty of cruelty to their horses, or of abuse to their fares. Very few cases—less than a dozen in a year—of overcharge occur. Loitering and “crawling,” and disregard of the regulations, are also offences for which the driver may have to answer before a magistrate, and which the police are bound to bring home to the guilty. In flagrant cases, a license may be revoked, refused, deferred, or renewed with a caution.

Cabmen are a curious race. They have ironical names for some stands. At an angle of Trafalgar Square, by a certain club whose members only “pay the legal,” there is a stand they call “Poor Man's Corner;” and for a similar reason they dub another spot in Barnsbury, which rarely yields a fare, “California.” A “mush” man is a driver who mounts his own cab. Cabs can be hired with the “plates” or license numbers already affixed.

Compensation for loss of luggage or for personal injury may be claimed of the proprietor, there being no limit to the damages. Large sums are paid for lost luggage. At Scotland Yard, there is the Lost Property Branch, also under Superintendent Ware, which is of great service to the public. Every cabman on the average has the opportunity of restoring to its owner

a missing article at least once in the course of the year, and awards ranging from £35 have been paid, the annual total being nearly £2,000 distributed in this way. The total number of articles deposited in one year exceeded 22,400. In this matter, as in most human affairs, the law of averages obtains. If a deposit be unclaimed for three months, it is restored to the driver or conductor. Bags with notes and gold, bonds, jewellery, and a diamond tiara valued at £850, have been left at various times in public carriages. Property found is advertised in the papers, and notice is given to hotels and lodging-houses, etc. ; but only about half the articles are claimed by the owners.

The police are appealed to in cases of disputed fares, and the pirate omnibuses occasion a good deal of trouble, especially at periods when visitors to London from the provinces throng the streets. To get a load, and then to turn all the passengers out under the pretext that a horse has lost a shoe, is an old trick. A movable table of fares is another, and a high charge for a ride of "any distance" is a third expedient. Some privately owned 'buses run on routes upon which the London General Omnibus Company and the Road Car Company charge penny fares. The public gains the idea that the penny is the legal and proper fare, and refuses to pay twopence ; the conductor, on the other hand, maintains that the charge is the sum which is painted upon the table inside the omnibus, and that it is not fixed by competition. This is a frequent cause of disputes, and the police are often compelled to support the conductor in the exercise of his legal rights. Magistrates, however, have little sympathy with men whose mode of gaining a livelihood resembles

so closely that of the genuine pirates; and the passenger who takes his case into court generally wins the day.

Costermongers' barrows have at various times created difficulty. There are some streets in the metropolis which have been converted into open markets. Traffic has in consequence been impeded by the stalls which lined the gutter-ways. The vestries, under Michael Angelo Taylor's Act, have power to remove them, although it has been unsuccessfully contended that the first Police Act terminated the authority of the local authorities to maintain their own watchmen. However, the commissioner has resisted any attempt to thrust the duty upon the police, and he contents himself with supporting the vestry officials by a show of force, whenever the opposition, as it did in the autumn of 1888 in Bird Fair, Shoreditch, becomes threatening. This is, at all events, the limit of action as regards stationary barrows; those upon the move, which chiefly concern the City Police, are not allowed to create an obstruction.

Another street duty is the capture of lost and dangerous dogs. When hydrophobia is prevalent, this indeed becomes dangerous, and Sir Charles Warren issued very stringent and unpopular regulations as to the leading of dogs in the thoroughfares, and the obligation of muzzling them. Ownerless dogs in many thousands were caught during the last scare, and it was a common occurrence for an officer to be despatched every morning to the Home for Lost Dogs with several mongrel curs on leash. There, unless claimed,

the animals were destroyed in a special "lethal chamber." In ordinary times, such as 1887, over twenty-five policemen were commended for courage in seizing mad or dangerous dogs, and in three cases personal injury was sustained. The risk is not so great as in stopping runaway horses, for twenty-nine of one hundred and fifty constables commended received hurts in the attempt.

"Smoke Jack" is the name given to the policeman whose special duty it is to note breaches of the Smoke Nuisance Abatement Acts, under which something less than one hundred proceedings are initiated yearly in London, with the result that convictions are generally secured, although the average fine is less than £2. Cautions are, however, given in over five hundred cases, with salutary effect. Engineer's expenses are payable by the defendants. It may be mentioned that in London the cost of the police supervision under this head is about £3,500 annually, twenty-one men at £1 16s. 8d. weekly being wholly employed in the inner circle, and twenty-nine others partly so in the outer ring. At one period, offences under the Act were very common, and exceeded 2,000 annually.

The police have also to license shoeblacks and messengers, and fix their stations.

In London, the commissioner may prohibit scavenging and the driving of cattle between ten a.m. and seven p.m. No picture or placards, except newspapers, can be carried through the streets without his permission, and he regulates the routes and conduct of



persons driving carts and carriages, cattle and animals, during the hours of divine service, on special holidays, or when the streets may be thronged. He has very large powers for preventing obstruction of any kind, and the cry of the police in a crowded city is beyond question that of "move on."

We will now turn to the country at large.

The inspection of weights and measures is a very important matter for insuring order and fair dealing. "Imperial standard weights and measures" are kept by persons duly appointed to carry out in all their details the onerous duties and regulations by law established. These imperial weights and measures have themselves to be thoroughly examined and adjusted at least every five years. In counties, superintendents and inspectors of police are almost invariably appointed by the justices at quarter sessions inspectors of weights and measures for allotted districts; whilst in some places the lord of the manor can select his own officer to do this work; and in cities and boroughs, an officer, sometimes not connected with the police, is especially assigned to this department.

At an appointed time in counties, public notice is given that the inspector will attend at a certain place to compare and adjust with the imperial standard all weights and measures which may be brought. This notice is given at least once a year. The inspector visits at irregular intervals shops, stores, warehouses, and, in fact, every place where weights and measures are used for business purposes, and he examines and tests all weights, measures, scales, weighing machines, steelyards, etc. Should he find any to be out of regu-

lation, unstamped, under or over weight, or measures or scales not true, he seizes them and lays an information against the offender.

It may be said by the uninitiated : "What ! punish a man for having a weight too heavy or a measure too large ?" One would think if he defrauded any one it would be himself. That aspect of the case certainly presents itself to an honest mind, but one may look a little further. The cute and unscrupulous dealer keeps two sets of weights. Those which are too heavy he uses when he buys from the unsuspecting farmer, gardener, or others who bring produce for sale. He sells with his properly adjusted weights, and by these means largely increases his profits. In all proved cases of this sort it would be well if the magistrates were severely to punish the offender. The time may come when such unfair-dealing scoundrels will be proceeded against by indictment for obtaining goods by false pretences, or "larceny by trick."

And who is it these people rob ? Not the wealthy dealer or buyer—they well know how to guard against fraud—but the poor working farmer or cottager who offers for sale his bacon, hams, and other produce ; he is the victim, and he is easily hoodwinked. We will go further than this. The man who is such a rogue on one side of the question is naturally to be as little trusted on the other. Drop into his shop and examine his scale, and you will in all probability find a true weight at the weighing end ; but turn up the other side, where the article for sale is placed, and you may discover a lump of fat cleverly stuck there, and which in a moment can be removed.

Then again, if beam scales are in use, the shop-

keeper may adroitly contrive, when he raises the scales from the counter, to give the beam a bias with a touch from his little finger. Another trick is that of quickly and heavily dropping bacon, lard, butter, cheese, and other commodities into the scale, apparently making weight, but not allowing time for the scale to recover from the impetus given. For instance, a customer enters a shop and asks for a pound of bacon, which is cut and dabbed into the scale—giving apparent weight. The purchaser, noticing the ready way in which the bacon was dropped in and taken out of the scale, might say, "Just let that have time to balance, will you?" "Oh," replies the shopkeeper, "if you don't like it, leave it!" and orders the customer off his premises.

Let us go into his back room or cellar, where he stores his vinegar and paraffin, which are sold by measure. These measures we shall find have been duly examined and stamped, but before he takes them into use he beats up the bottoms to lessen their capacity for holding. A knock or two from the inside is sufficient to restore them to their original dimensions.

## CHAPTER XX.

## CRIMINAL INVESTIGATION.

Early history of the detective police—Charles Dickens describes them in 1842—The present department and its history—Sketches of the leading detectives—The conspiracy case of 1877—Criminal Investigation Department established (1878)—Mr. Howard Vincent's account of it—Sir Charles Warren as detective—Mr. Vincent's reply—Sir William Harcourt declares there is no mystery in the detection of crime—The Black Museum and its ghastly relics—Peace, the burglar—Gamblers' appliances—Mr. Matthews lays down the theory of rewards.

ON the retirement from public life of the worthies of Bow Street, the detective system of the metropolis ceased, and for fifteen years there was no establishment of the sort connected with the police. Sir J. Graham, however, revived it in 1842, and the force under him consisted of three inspectors, nine sergeants, and a body of plain-clothes men.

It is to Dickens that we must turn for an account of the office as it existed in 1850, eight years after it was set on foot. "To each division of the force," he said, "is attached two officers, who are denominated 'detectives.' The staff at head-quarters consists of six sergeants and two inspectors. Thus the detective police, of which we hear so much, consists of only forty-two individuals, whose duty it is to wear no uniform, and to perform the most difficult operations

of their craft. They have not only to counteract the machinations of every sort of rascal whose only means of existence is avowed rascality, but to clear up family mysteries, the investigation of which demands the utmost delicacy and tact."

At that period, the number of persons who made a trade of thieving in London was estimated to be not more than 6,000 ; of these, nearly 200 were first-class thieves or "swell-mobsmen ;" 600 "macemen" and trade-swindlers, bill-swindlers, dog-stealers, etc. ; about 40 were burglars, "dancers," "garreters," and other adepts with the skeleton keys. The rest were pick-pockets, "gonophs"—mostly young thieves, who sneak into areas or rob tills—and other pilferers.

Every year the actual number of persons apprehended by the police of the Criminal Investigation Department is in these days upwards of 6,000. The machinery by which these results were accomplished we have now to describe.

The Detective, or Criminal Investigation, Department is under the control of Dr. Anderson, who, having had four years' experience of the prisons branch of the Home Office, and much knowledge of the ways in which secret service money is expended, took Mr. Monro's place, when the latter resigned. Mr. Monro having since been appointed commissioner, Dr. Anderson is now responsible to him, he having the assistance of Mr. Williamson, who joined the force in 1850, and who of late years has exchanged his post as superintendent of the Detective Department for that of chief constable. Mr. Shore, who has been thirty years in the Metropolitan Police, succeeded to the vacancy, and he

now directs a staff of chief inspectors and of inspectors. In June, 1889, Mr. Melville Leslie McNaghten was appointed assistant chief constable of the Criminal Investigation Department. There are five chief inspectors, but one of these, Mr. Neame, is in charge of the Convict Supervision Office, and another, Mr. Littlechild, has command of a little body of what may be termed political police.

Besides these officers, there are local inspectors, one of whom is attached to each division, and he has several detective sergeants to assist him. In this way, at the beginning of 1889, a total force of about three hundred men was composed, of whom thirty were first-class inspectors, and seven were second-class inspectors. We may state upon authority that there are proposals for the strengthening of the Detective Department, in the direction of augmenting the number of men attached to the local divisions.

The difficulty of forming such a body was greater than it seems, now that it has been successfully overcome. There was, at first, a strong feeling against "a highly centralized police exercising a secret surveillance."

It was in 1877 that confidence in the detectives was rudely shaken by the disclosures in connection with the great turf frauds, and the subsequent indictment on a charge of conspiracy of three inspectors of police, two of whom were sentenced to two years' imprisonment. The system which existed until 1877 had been established in 1869, when there were about thirty detectives at head-quarters, and about a dozen attached to each division, under the separate control of the superintendent of the division.

The plan of putting constables into plain clothes

continued until 1878, when, owing to a want of supervision, a commission of inquiry was appointed, which ended in the creation of a directorship of criminal investigation, an office entrusted to Mr. Howard Vincent, who held it for six years. Mr. Vincent was not only director, but dictator, and he enjoyed far greater freedom than had fallen to the lot of those who have followed him, for on his resignation the directorship was transformed into an assistant commissionership, subordinate, of course, to the chief; whereas the director was allowed by Colonel Henderson the power of initiative and of unquestioned command.

Mr. Vincent, in 1883, declared his views freely on the scope of this department, and we may venture to give the following extracts, as showing the spirit which animated him, and the methods which he adopted. First, as to the stamp of men required for detectives, Mr. Vincent said :—

“There is probably no class of public servants who have so thankless a duty to perform as the detective police. They are habitually expected to accomplish impossibilities; although afforded by law the most scanty and inadequate facilities, although working in the dark with their hands to a great extent tied, there is usually dissatisfaction if they cannot bring home an offence to its author. It is often easy to find out the author of an offence, but it is quite another matter to be able to prove the legal guilt of the delinquent by legal means. For this a considerable knowledge of the criminal law and practice is required. The work is attractive in the eyes of novel-readers, and it has beyond question its interests, but it is also

attended with very considerable risk, for, with the most honest intentions in the world, a detective officer may find himself in very serious trouble. It is therefore not a matter of surprise that the difficulty of finding good men is very considerable. Without at least two or three years' experience of ordinary police duty they are valueless. To perform the latter a certain physical standard is essential, while it often lessens the qualification for detective work, and yet with rare exceptions cannot be departed from, because it often happens that a man has to be sent back from duty in plain clothes to duty in uniform. Considerable knowledge of the world, good education, good address, tact, and temper are also essential to a detective officer. Considering these things, it is therefore a matter for congratulation that the men are as good as they are; indeed, in the words of Sir William Vernon Harcourt, speaking at the Metropolitan and City Police Orphanage, 'when we consider the temptations to which the police are exposed—none perhaps greater—it is to my mind not so surprising that they should sometimes go astray, but it is marvellous how seldom. Their work is done with a fidelity, a diligence, and discipline which is the admiration of all who take the pains to make themselves acquainted with it.'

"It has been urged more than once that better and more reliable detectives might be found among the retired officers of the army and younger sons of gentlemen than in the ranks of the police. Willing, as I hope I shall always be, to give every suggestion a fair trial, six such recruits have been enrolled in the Criminal Investigation Department, with a result, I am sorry to say, eminently unsatisfactory. There is,



I fear, little doubt that the gentlemen who have failed in one of the professions which they usually adopt, are less trustworthy, less reliable, and more difficult to control than those who enter a calling such as the police in the ordinary course.

"It is difficult to lay down hard and fast rules for the best training of a detective force, the duties they are called upon to perform being exceedingly different in their character and scope, but I think the best general groundwork is to be found in the ordinary life of a constable in a large and busy town for two or three years, added to a theoretical study of the elementary principles of the criminal law. I am strongly adverse to permanent employment in detective duty, and certainly not for one day beyond the duration of personal inclination for the work. The more the uniform and detective branches of a police service are made interchangeable, the better I am convinced it is, and it would be very advantageous if promotion to the rank of superintendent had necessarily to be preceded by some practical experience as a detective officer.

"As I have before indicated, detectives are often blamed for not performing the impossible; that is, for not bringing a criminal to justice against whom no evidence can be obtained, and for not discovering stolen property which the law itself does its utmost to conceal. There is a great and natural hostility on the part of public feeling in this country to the employment of those artifices for the detection of crime which naturally suggest themselves; to the exercising, in fact, of the same ingenuity against criminals which they bring to bear against society. There is a like repugnance to any system of 'espionage.' Under such

circumstances it is necessary to wait for the actual commission of crime before active steps are taken to bring the perpetrators, however well known their designs, to justice, and the persons defrauded must have been genuinely deceived, and not be mere agents of the police. This, although beyond question safer on the whole for the public interest, inevitably reduces the power of the police, who are therefore frequently not so much to blame as the system under which they are compelled to act in Great Britain. It is the price paid for liberty, and, as the Home Secretary once observed, 'those who complain of failure in detection are the first to denounce the only methods by which it can be effectually accomplished.'"

Sir Charles Warren had his own ideas on the subject of the position of Director of Criminal Investigation, who, he maintained, was subordinate to the commissioner. He proceeded as follows, in the famous article in *Murray's Magazine*, the publication of which was declared a breach of regulations, a reflection which the spirit of the soldier could not brook :—

"No change was made in the method of enrolling members for the detective service, but some few candidates have been admitted direct, and a great number examined and rejected. Of those admitted, few if any have been found qualified to remain in the detective service. It seems, therefore, that although the Criminal Investigation Branch is open to receive any qualified person direct, as a general rule no persons for some years past have presented themselves sufficiently qualified to remain. And there are indications of the advantages of a previous police training in the uniform branch, in the fact that the most successful private

detectives at present in the country are those who have formerly been in and originally trained in the uniform branch. . . .

"The great aim of the present system is to keep up the most cordial relations between the uniform branch and detective service, consistent with efficiency in both branches. . . .

"Englishmen possess pre-eminently qualities which are essential to good detective work, such as dogged pertinacity in watching, thoroughness of purpose, an absence of imagination, and downright sterling honesty. These qualities go far to counteract the wants before enumerated.

"Probably also the Englishman is yet more wanting in originality than his Continental neighbour, but this is a quality which is very sparingly bestowed on human beings, though it can be cultivated if a germ exist. On the whole, it may be expected that for all ordinary services the Englishman among his countrymen is as likely to make as good a detective as a Frenchman among the French. But for abnormal services, as for those among bodies of foreigners living together in London, probably some special measures should be adopted."

Sir Charles added that in joining the detective force there was no hard and fast rule as to height, physique, etc., as in the uniform branch; any eligible candidate could be selected by the commissioner, and it was not necessary for him to serve previously as a uniform constable. Nevertheless, there was a good deal of truth, as well as banter, in *Punch's* skit, drawn by Du Maurier, which showed the detective known to all the world by his regulation boots.

Addressing the House of Commons, Sir William Harcourt declared that there was no mystery about the detection of crime. Mysterious and fanciful Lecocqs did not exist at all.

There is some truth in this view, but, notwithstanding, there is a good deal of romance about crime. Perhaps the most thrilling stories are those which never become public; and it is one of the drawbacks of the detective's lot that he may have all the trouble of piecing together a good case, which may never see the light of day, the prosecutors at the last moment declining to appear. In capital offences, however, where the Crown relieves the private individual of that responsibility, the officers have every inducement to exert themselves. A meagre but unique record of their successes is contained in the Black Musuem.

The Black Museum is allotted a room in the basement of the Convict Office in Great Scotland Yard, which is in reality a private house, ill adapted for the purposes required. In fact, the museum is in a cellar, and it is a collection, displayed in amateurish fashion, of relics which recall certain *causes célèbres*. Therein is the chief interest, and perhaps the grimness of the show is not lessened by the bareness of the boards upon which the array of knives, pistols, revolvers, and criminal curios is laid out. There is no attempt at cataloguing the items, and the museum, as at present arranged, serves no useful object.

To the morbid-minded it must have unrivalled attractions. These bloodstained razors, table-knives, hammers, and choppers; these flintlock pistols and common revolvers, have each their peculiar history.

Needless to say, there is a wonderful collection of

burglars' tools and apparatus, amongst them being a portable ladder invented by Peace, of whom more hereafter. The ladder was constructed of a number of pieces of wood screwed together, and capable of being folded up in small compass. It was provided with an iron hook, to grip balconies. Peace, not unlike the celebrated forger Patch, did not despise disguise; and amongst his belongings were a pair of dark glasses, and an artificial, home-made stump for an arm, with a hook attached, like Captain Cuttle's. He also used a small vice, which he screwed to the projecting end of a key, and by this means unlocked a door from the outside. The same trick is performed by others of his craft with the aid of a bent piece of wire pushed through the keyhole. Peace's tools were highly finished, and carried in a case of wash-leather; and he melted down his own spoil in a crucible. Peace was a burglar who believed in the revolver. There were others like him, whom we shall name hereafter. In the ordinary course of business, a pistol is not in the burglar's kit. Wright and Wheatley, the Hoxton burglars, had a splendid set of skeleton keys.

Another "stock-in-trade" consisted of a key-saw, a chisel, a jemmy hinged so as to be concealed in the pocket, a "little alderman—a jemmy in two parts, which can be screwed together—and a number of skeleton keys with wards at each end, the whole contained in a neat little black bag. Usually, however, the tools employed by a burglar are good, honest articles, purchasable at any ironmonger's.

Wedges, to be inserted under the door so as to prevent it from being forced inwards, were also employed; and there are instances of detection having

resulted from the identification of the wood for which they had been made with remnants of furniture, such as chair legs, which have been found in the prisoner's abode.

The Black Museum contains samples of the plant used by coiners, including moulds and batteries, and the specimens of base metal which are produced therefrom. Smashers wrap their bad half-crowns in a special paper to prevent them from discolouring, which they are apt to do, by exposure to the atmosphere.

Particularly rich in card-sharpping apparatus is the Scotland Yard collection. Gambling in the saloons of Transatlantic steamers is carried on largely, and a year or two since a shooting affray at Euston was the means of putting into the hands of the police the whole bagful of tricks, for the articles had been used on board the boats.

In concluding this chapter we may quote Mr. Matthews's reasons why the practice of giving Government rewards was discontinued :—

“ Before 1884 it was the frequent practice of the Home Office to offer rewards, sometimes of large amount, in serious cases. In 1883, in particular, several rewards, ranging from £200 to £2,000, were offered in such cases as the murder of Police-constable Boans and the dynamite explosions in Charles Street and at various railway stations. These rewards, like the reward of £10,000 in the Phoenix Park murders, proved ineffectual, and produced no evidence of any value. In 1884 there was a change of policy. Early in that year a remarkable case occurred. A conspiracy was formed to effect an explosion at the German Embassy ; to ‘ plant ’ papers upon an inno-

cent person, and to accuse him of the crime in order to obtain the reward which was expected. The revelation of this conspiracy led the then Secretary of State (Sir W. Harcourt) to consider the whole question. He consulted the police authorities both in England and in Ireland, and the conclusions he arrived at were—that the practice of offering large and sensational rewards in cases of serious crime is not only ineffectual, but mischievous; that rewards produced, generally speaking, no practical result beyond satisfying a public demand for conspicuous action; that they operate prejudicially by relaxing the exertions of the police; and that they tend to produce false rather than reliable testimony. He decided, therefore, in all cases to abandon the practice of offering rewards, as they had been found by experience to be a hindrance rather than an aid in the detection of crime. These conclusions were publicly announced, and acted upon in two important cases in 1884—one, a shocking murder and violation of a little girl at Middlesbrough; the other, the dynamite outrage at London Bridge, in which case the City offered a reward of £5,000. The principle thus established has since been adhered to, I believe, without exception, at the Home Office. The whole subject was reconsidered in 1885 by Sir Richard Cross in a remarkable case of infanticide at Plymouth; and again in 1886 by the right hon. member for Edinburgh (Mr. Childers) in the notorious case of Louisa Hart. On both occasions, after careful consideration, and with the concurrence of the best authorities, the principle was maintained, and rewards were refused. Since I have been at the Home Office, I have followed

the rule thus deliberately laid down and steadily adhered to by my predecessors. I do not mean that the rule may not be subject to exceptions, as, for instance, where it is known who the criminal is, and information is wanted only as to his hiding-place, or on account of other circumstances of the crime itself. In the Whitechapel murders, not only are these conditions wanting at present, but the danger of a false charge is intensified by the excited state of public feeling. I know how desirable it is to allay that public feeling, and I should have been glad if the circumstances had justified me in giving visible proof that the authorities are not heedless or indifferent."



## CHAPTER XXI.

## ON THE TRACK OF A MURDERER.

Police procedure—Detective instinct—Local inspectors—Unromantic men—Suggested reforms—Step by step—Statements—Theories—Coroner's court—Police surgeons—Dangers of publicity—"Jack the Ripper"—The press and police—Lefroy's portrait—Currell's escape—Magisterial examination of prisoners—How a fugitive criminal was traced—Deceiving the coroner—Murder does not "out"—Circumstantial evidence.

A MURDER with a motive, and with sensational surroundings, has a peculiar and powerful attractiveness for the generality of mankind, and the unravelling of the mystery is followed step by step with the deepest interest by the public. It is largely owing to this demand for details that the work of detection has become increasingly difficult; but, nevertheless, in London, at all events, the present competition to which the department is subjected, on the part of the newspapers, owes its encouragement directly to the policy which had been pursued at Scotland Yard.

Let us trace the system of investigation. It is generally the uniform police who are first upon the scene on the discovery of a body where death has taken place under circumstances of suspicion. Unfortunately, the uniform police have not always the

detective instinct, and very often valuable time has been lost in the tracking of the fugitive criminal for the want of prompt initiation, whilst there has been terrible bungling in the observation of little points of the utmost value as circumstantial evidence. It was not until five or six of the Whitechapel series of murders and mutilations had gone by without any real clue having been obtained, that the police thought it advisable to photograph the corpse, before removal, and thus preserve a permanent record of its position. But even in this matter they erred in the other direction, for whilst they were engaged in the necessary formalities, and waiting for bloodhounds, which were not available—and if the dogs had been at hand they would have been useless, as the trail had been frequently crossed—they were allowing the residents in the locality, whose evidence was valuable, to be interviewed and confused by reporters. Thus frequently it happened that statements appeared in print before they were committed to writing in the detectives' room.

It is of the highest importance that police officers of all ranks should have a general idea as to what should be immediately done in the case of a ghastly discovery, but under the present system they seem to content themselves with calling in the divisional surgeon, or other doctor, and summoning the detective officer on duty. However, the delay is not great, for, attached to each police division, there is an inspector who is the connecting link between Scotland Yard detective office and the uniform police. This inspector is usually selected from the ranks of the latter, having served as a sergeant in plain clothes. He may there-

fore be supposed to have a pretty accurate idea of the locality in which he works. His quarters are usually at one of the section houses, and he is therefore soon on the scene to direct operations.

It is the custom, when a murder of an unusual character has occurred, to detach from head-quarters one or more of the central staff. The Criminal Investigation Department inspector thus detailed to assist the local inspector usually acts as the controller of expenditure, in a sense, as he vouches for the items and keeps the cash right at the "Yard." He is also in direct communication with Superintendent Shore, Chief Constable Williamson, Dr. Atkinson, and the commissioner, as he daily travels to and from Whitehall to the locality of the crime.

It is the Criminal Investigation Department officer who has the duty of making an arrest, when an apprehension can be counted upon. He gets a good deal of the credit without much of the rough work, but his are the anxiety and a large share of responsibility.

It is absurd to suppose that these officers are unknown. Their features, peculiarities of dress, tone of voice, their temperaments, their favourite retreats, in fact every characteristic, are soon learned by any one who may come into casual contact with them, and it is only the writer of fiction who pretends that they are of the mysterious Lecocq stamp, profligate of disguise, and having their pockets lined with secret service money. We do not say it in reproach, but there is scarcely a London detective who betrays a nervous organization. A stolid, even, slow, and undemonstrative disposition is a common attribute, and in some cases, no doubt, it is a very valuable quality. Yet

among the men we have mentioned, there are those who own to having had many a sleepless night and many a troubled dream, which perhaps would not have been expected to fall to the lot of men possessed of such cool self-control.

A matter-of-fact mind in the elucidation of crimes of an extraordinary character may be a hindrance to success, and it seems to be a defect in the system that it does not freely invite qualified assistance, untrammelled by the restrictions of routine, in times of emergency. For the detection of common-class crime, falling within well-defined limits, and for political investigation, the paid informers, and every other kind of "nose" which the police employ, do their work very well; but when the deed displays a motive and a character which show it to have been the act of some one altogether new to murder or conspiracy, and strange to the ways of crime, then the wider the range of intellect, and the riper the experience of human life, which can be brought to bear upon the investigation of the circumstances, the better are the chances of detection.

Scotland Yard, of necessity, depends very largely upon "statements" volunteered to it. These statements are generally offered, first of all, at the nearest police station, where they are committed to writing by the inspector in charge. Every one knows that there is an art in putting questions, and some knowledge of it is of necessity acquired by an inspector in the charge-room; but in cases of supreme importance a rough and ready interrogation is not sufficient.

The statement is therefore handed to a detective, who is instructed to verify it, and send in a report. In

due course the original, and the observations there-upon, are returned to the inspector in charge of a case, and he uses his discretion as to whether it should be filed for future use or reference at head-quarters. When there is no clue, every tangible piece of information is of course preserved, and during the Whitechapel tragedies extreme care was taken in sifting every tittle of rumour or fact that was communicated to the police, however trivial. This course was the teaching of experience, for in some instances really important information has been missed because of the apparent inability of some detectives to follow up more than one theory at a time, and their tendency to reject the consideration of circumstances which combined to throw a different light upon the case.

A theory is a very valuable help to a man in stimulating him to collect evidence or to piece it together, but nothing is so fatal as obstinately to stick to one view of the case, to the exclusion of all others. Yet it is to be feared that, not alone in London, but throughout the police forces of the United Kingdom, this failing is frequently to be seen, crippling the cause of justice, and sometimes even tempting policemen to manufacture testimony in support of a weak prosecution.

Let us now suppose that we have reached the coroner's court. It depends very much upon the coroner as to the value of his inquiry. He may, or may not, receive the aid of the police in collecting his witnesses. One of the most energetic coroners in London is Mr. Wynne Baxter. He has sifted the testimony relating to all, except one, of the Whitechapel murders. Mr. Baxter steadfastly set his face

against suppression of facts, and in one of the earlier inquests it was only under pressure that the divisional surgeon of police disclosed what his post-mortem had revealed. In the case which did not come before Mr. Baxter, the coroner took the course of abruptly closing the inquiry, without asking for the detailed medical evidence, the result being that the injuries inflicted upon the seventh victim, Mary Janet Kelly, in Miller's Court, Dorset Street, have not been placed on public record. One result was to put into circulation a number of statements which may or may not have been in accordance with the truth, but which were misleading because not authorized. "Crown's 'quest law" unmistakably sets out the necessity of recording the nature of *all* the wounds, the description of the weapon by which they were produced, and the circumstances under which they were inflicted, so that the action of Dr. Macdonald in the Dorset Street case cannot be taken as a safe precedent.

In that instance the police acquiesced in the closure of the inquest before the surgeon was recalled. They rendered themselves thereby liable to the suspicion that they were wishing to conceal failures which in earlier murders had been attributed to their investigation. It is right to remember that Mr. Monro had not succeeded to the post of chief commissioner, and that Sir Charles Warren had manifested, according to popular report, some curious ideas of crime-detection. But, on the other hand, it must not be forgotten that the cup of horrors was already overflowing, and there was reason to believe that the publication of details would lead to imitation, something of the sort having already happened at Gateshead. That there was reason

in this view was subsequently shown by the fact that similar atrocities were committed at Havant, Bradford, and Yeabridge—the victims being children—not long after the mutilations in London, whilst attempts to kill women were elsewhere reported. Indeed, it was remarkable to what an extent the infectious influence of these diabolical outrages was felt, not only in England, but on the Continent.

The fame of “Jack the Ripper” spread far and wide. It is probable that nothing would have been heard of this cognomen had it not been for the indiscretion of Scotland Yard in publishing a facsimile of sensational letters sent to a news agency, which thereby gave to these interesting documents the stamp of official authority.

Neither police nor coroner, however, foresaw all this. They distrusted the newspapers. The police had especial reason to resent the publicity given by the press, which unhesitatingly exposed their shortcomings, whilst at the same time they hampered the detectives. It will be remembered that suspicion attached to a man nicknamed “Leather Apron,” chiefly on account of the wild stories told by the women of Spitalfields. The man was detained for inquiries for two days, the police making no charge. “Leather Apron” was perfectly innocent, but the police by their reticence were really responsible for the deductions that were drawn from their conduct. Henceforward, under pain of dismissal, the detectives refused information even to the accredited representatives of London papers. But there was a suspicion that there was favouritism exercised.

There has always been a rule to the effect that in-

formation is not to be given to the press, Mr. Vincent having enjoined : "Police must not on any account give any information whatever to gentlemen connected with the press relative to matters within police knowledge, or relative to duties to be performed or orders received, or communicate in any manner, either directly or indirectly, with editors or reporters of newspapers on any matter connected with the public service, without express and special authority. The slightest deviation from this rule may completely frustrate the ends of justice, and defeat the endeavour of superior officers to advance the welfare of the public service. Individual merit will be invariably recognized in due course, but officers who without authority give publicity to discoveries, tending to produce sensation and alarm, show themselves wholly unworthy of their posts."

Now, this rule has been disregarded time after time. When Mr. Monro was assistant commissioner, he owed to the press the success of his policy. To the *Daily Telegraph* he communicated particulars of an alleged projected fraud upon the public, with the result that an action was brought against that journal, and, although no verdict was recorded, the loss was considerable. The fact was brought forward in the House of Commons when the Libel Bill was under discussion, and yet the Home Secretary at first refused to accede to the proposal, which is now law, to give privilege to the publication of official communications. Mr. Monro used the same means of prevention to frustrate the Jubilee plot, and when he became chief commissioner he showed by the issue of a notice to the papers that he was still convinced of the value of



publicity. Even Mr. Vincent admitted: "The press is a power in the detection of crime which we must not omit to take into account. Occasionally, and I am afraid not unfrequently, the competition for news leads to the premature publication of information fatal to the objects of the police, and proceedings are not unknown, such as dogging and following the officers engaged, and interviewing witnesses, which entail the greatest annoyance and entirely frustrate the performance of public duty. But, on the whole, the conductors of the press are willing to give assistance, and when publicity is desirable their help is invaluable. Indeed, if the identity of a culprit is clear, and the importance of a case is sufficient, the question of his capture is reduced to a mere question of time and money. This may be illustrated by the proceedings adopted in the case of a most successful swindler, who by a most ingenious system long evaded arrest. He was known to be in the north of England or Lowlands of Scotland, and every police officer, railway and post-office official, every licensed victualler, and thousands of other persons therein, were furnished as simultaneously as possible with his portrait, description, and handwriting, with the offer of a reward. In forty-eight hours he was in custody. Similarly in the case of the murderer Lefroy. The publicity given to his portrait in the press (the *Daily Telegraph*) secured his arrest, and if it had been delayed sufficient time for his purpose, millions of reward bills, in all languages, would have been distributed throughout the world. You can readily imagine the moral effect of such a procedure on the individual sought. He sees at every turn the price set upon his detention, and feels that

everybody is against him ; and more than one case has occurred of a man giving himself up rather than endure this."

A portrait was also circulated by the police. It was issued at the time the murderer of Mr. Gold remained in hiding in Stepney, after his escape from Wallington on the night of the June day in 1881 when his highly strung nervous organization and homicidal mania led him to steep his hands in blood. It will be recalled that Lefroy travelled from London to Brighton first-class, and that at Croydon he changed into the carriage occupied by his victim, whom he shot first in Merstham Tunnel, and then engaged him in a long death struggle, which ended in the body of Mr. Gold being thrown upon the line in Balcombe Tunnel. At the first stopping-place—Preston Park—Lefroy got out, and although a piece of gold chain was hanging from his boot, his plausible story was not disbelieved, and he was allowed to proceed to Brighton, where he made a further statement that he had been assaulted by a mysterious and missing assailant. His wounds, which were circular cuts on the head, were dressed at the hospital, and then he was sent back to Wallington in the care of the police. By this time a telegram had arrived announcing the discovery of the body, but by a foolish misunderstanding Lefroy was allowed to go into his sister's house, from the back of which he made his retreat, and his track was lost for many days.

To resume, the police of London would find it greatly to their advantage if some plan were adopted of treating authorized pressmen with uniform courtesy, instead of with brusque impertinence, as has frequently happened. The relations between the repre-

sentatives of the public, the reporters, and the servants of the public, the police, in so far as the Metropolitan District is concerned, need to be carefully reconsidered by the commissioner. It is a proceeding unworthy of the dignity of a great journal, to have to depend for its news upon the gossip of a police subordinate who has no interest in concealing the information which his superior would decline to divulge ; and yet to such subterfuges as loosening a constable's tongue by plying him with drink or money bribes many reporters are compelled to descend when the responsible detective in charge of a case declines to open his mouth. Further than this, an energetic pressman, when rebuffed by the police, finds therein his stimulus to do detective work on his own account ; and, naturally, he will not consult the police as to the expediency of publishing or withholding the information he obtains by personal inquiry.

The proprietor of a newspaper for self-protection has frequently to make independent investigation into the truth of information before he can publish it, and he has a right to demand that facilities shall be accorded to his staff in the pursuit of their duties. The representative of a powerful journal will, if he enjoys the confidence of the police, never abuse it, and it is worth the consideration of the commissioner whether some means cannot be adopted of giving recognition to this class of men, so that it may not be so much a matter of hazard as to whether they get at the truth or not. Regular hands, of course, learn the best way of procuring information, but in a large city like London the changes in the force are so numerous that one is never certain of meeting familiar faces.

The City Police interpose no such obstacles as those described, and in the provinces the police and the press are on the most friendly terms, to mutual advantage.

Of course there are times when salient facts cannot be published, as we shall presently show ; but there are, even in such instances, interesting points which may be disclosed, and which would be quite as satisfactory to the pressman for "copy" purposes.

Where the identity of the culprit is clear, the Metropolitan Police are the first to invite the co-operation of the press. Currell would never have been captured had it not been for the hue and cry of the papers. Currell was the man who shot his sweetheart at Hoxton, and he, like Dr. Lamson, went to Scotland Yard to give himself up ; but Currell was sent away without having been allowed to see the detective for whom he asked, and to whom he was known. In consequence, he was sought by the police for ten days before he was apprehended. We may quote an article on the subject of the press and police from a leading newspaper :—"We say unhesitatingly that the wider the ramifications of the newspaper press have become, the larger its circulation, and the more powerful its influence, the greater have been the services which it has been enabled to render to the cause of justice in throwing light on the minutest episodes of deeds of unusual turpitude. In short, there is not the slightest exaggeration in saying that the press is in many respects the very best and most trustworthy friend and assistant that the Detective Department can have. A hundred and fifty years ago, when the head of the murdered husband of Catherine Hayes was discovered

in the Thames, the London newspapers were few and their circulation was small; and the authorities, at their wits' end to procure the identification of the grisly relic of mortality, were fain to set it upon a pole in the churchyard of St. Margaret, Westminster, that all who ran might read its features. And mainly by these means the murderess Catherine Hayes was brought to the gallows and the stake—for the murder of a husband was then petty treason, and the wretched wife was burnt as well as hanged. Were such an exhibition made in these days, it would surely be stigmatized as 'sensational,' 'morbid,' 'sickening,' and so forth; and superfine critics would apply the courteous epithets of 'ghouls' and 'vampires' to the parish officers who set the head of a murdered man on a pole. In our times, the newspapers do what the headborough and constables of St. Margaret's did in the reign of George I. Everything pertaining to the crime is exhaustively described; the details are, no doubt, often very shocking and very ghastly; but the general public are no more compelled to read them than they are to peruse the shipping and market intelligence; whereas, on the other hand, the minute chronicling of the incidents surrounding a crime has, in hundreds of instances, tended directly to the discovery of the criminal.

"People with short memories, or those too obstinate to have their preconceived convictions disturbed by incontrovertible facts, would have us believe that exhaustive publicity touching the commission of exceptional atrocities is a thing of yesterday. They are too oblivious or too opinionated to bear in mind that, fifty-two years ago, Greenacre was tracked to his doom

chiefly through the agency of the newspaper press of the day. The dismembered fragments of the body of the unfortunate woman whom he had slain turned up piecemeal in various parts of the metropolis; and every fresh discovery stimulated the police to renewed efforts, and culminated at last in the bringing home of the crime to Greenacre. The more recent case of Lefroy is another instance eminently in point. Instances might be multiplied of the substantial assistance which journalism has for years and years rendered to the cause of justice by affording publicity to the most intimate details of crime; but, not at all unnaturally, the police resent and are jealous of the aid extended to them from a voluntary and independent source. The policy thus adopted is obviously a stupid dog-in-the-manger one; but it suits official uppishness and the pride of police subordinates dressed in a little brief authority to snub and to thwart the representatives of the press, and to be either sulkily silent or barrenly communicative on topics concerning which the public, through their journalistic delegates, justifiably demand ample information. If the detectives would frankly say to the reporters, 'We do possess a clue; we have received certain information; but it is of the highest importance to the interests of justice that the clue should not be indicated, nor the information divulged,' the utmost deference would be shown to their wishes, their reticence would be respected, and, in proverbial parlance, the journalist would wait for the pear to become ripe, and forbear to pluck it; but to all appearance the less the police have to communicate the more desirous they are to enshroud their ignorance in mystery."

We do not accept these views in their full bearing, but there is truth in the contention that the press mean to be friends of the police, if only they are allowed to co-operate with them. Embittered competition is rare in the provinces, where the field is not so large, and where, as we have stated, the detectives and the reporters are on intimate terms, and respect each other's confidence.

When a prisoner is arrested in London, irrespective of the coroner's inquiry, which may be going on contemporaneously, there is the magisterial investigation. The police in both courts hold, as it were, a watching brief for the prosecution, although, as we have explained elsewhere, the Treasury usually relieves them of the responsibility of appearing as advocates. Chief Constable Williamson has, in his time, briefly opened a case against a prisoner in order to obtain a remand, but it is seldom the experience of metropolitan policemen to discharge the duties of counsel. Sir Henry Hawkins has affirmed that it is a bad practice to allow a policeman to act as an advocate before any tribunal, so that he would have to bring forward only such evidence as he might think fit, and keep back any that he might think likely to tell in favour of any person placed upon his trial. Lord Coleridge has concurred in this view. Nevertheless, it is expected of chief constables in the country at large to prepare briefs in orthodox fashion, and to submit their case to the Bench in truly forensic style. Of course, town clerks sometimes do this work for them.

We may now describe from the view of personal experience some incidents attaching to the investigation of murder in the provinces.

The following case, with which I had to do in 1882, was a simple one, but serious in its results, for the victim never fully recovered from the attack which was made upon his life, and died about two years afterwards. It seems to have come to the knowledge of a young criminal, Thompson, eighteen years of age, that Mr. T—— had, in pursuance of an executorship, received a large sum of money. Thompson was indeed sitting in the gentleman's office waiting for a note, when the money passed, and the sight of it had fired his desires. It was this fact—and it was never hinted at or made public—which enabled us, after the crime had been committed, to search for the real culprit without delay.

It was about seven o'clock on one evening in May that Thompson, who was a coachbuilder's apprentice, went to Mr. T——'s shop and asked for two pennyworth of lip-salve. Whilst Mr. T—— was filling a pill-box he felt stunned by something, as he thought, falling on his head, and something touched his elbow. Turning round, he saw Thompson with a hammer in his hand, in the act of striking. There was a struggle for the weapon, and the youth tried to throttle the man, who felt blood running down his throat. The fight for life continued, and the injured man dragged his assailant to the window, which he broke with his fist, and cried "Murder!" whereupon the young fellow broke away and escaped.

There was very little doubt that Thompson meant murder. He had said as much during the wrestling, and a knife which laid on the counter had served him to inflict the wounds upon Mr. T——'s throat, and above the left ear. The poor gentleman remained in a dangerous condition for some days.



Immediate search for Thompson was instituted, and on the same night, about two hours after the outrage, he was discovered secreted between the flue and the roof of a disused heating apparatus in a brewery. He was taken to the police office, and blood-marks were discovered upon him. A paring knife was found in the flue ; it had been wrapped in paper. On the following day, from the same place, a razor was recovered.

Thompson was well defended at Leeds Assizes, but his guilt was clearly proved, and he was sentenced to twenty years' penal servitude.

Between twenty and thirty years ago, an event came to my knowledge that had taken place in a neighbouring division. For a long time a series of heavy and petty crimes had been committed. Stack-firing, maiming cattle, fowl-stealing, and other minor robberies, which caused much alarm, harassed the neighbourhood, and gave much trouble to the police, who were scarcely of adequate numbers to cope with the overflow of offences. The farmers and their servants did their best to watch their property themselves and help the police, between whom and themselves a good understanding existed. Early one morning, a little past midnight, a farmer and his man put to flight two notorious thieves, who had broken into his hen-roost and killed and put into a bag thirteen hens and a cock. When disturbed, the thieves threw the bag on the ground, and were pursued by the farmer and his man. A river was not far distant, and the miscreants, hoping to escape, attempted to cross it, at a part which was narrow but deep, by climbing a tree and passing from a branch to a branch

of another tree, which overhung the water from the other side. The first branch gave way with their double weight, split, and let them down, and the men were both drowned. When the farmer and his servant arrived, they were unable to save them.

Immediate information was given to the police. A constable, who was stationed at a village not far distant, quickly arrived, as also did another police constable, who was on the other side of the river, and was under another jurisdiction. The two policemen, the farmer, and his servant quickly procured ropes and other appliances, and succeeded in recovering the bodies from the river. They were landed at the side on which the fowls had been stolen; the farmer and his man-servant went home, leaving the constables to make their own arrangements. It must be understood they were pretty well "knocked up," and it will be well to explain that the river divided the liberties of two coroners, and that the constable on whose beat the bodies lay was nearly past service. He suffered much from lame feet, and, there being no railway, he would have had to walk twenty-eight miles—fourteen miles each way—to give notice to his coroner, whilst the constable belonging to the district on the other side of the river was a comparatively young and able man, and could easily warn his coroner, who could be reached by railway. I do not attempt to justify what took place, but I will relate the facts which afterwards oozed out.

To avoid the long walk for the worn-out police constable, and the risk of being seen had they attempted to cross the bridge a little way off, they consulted together, and eventually one constable

walked round by the bridge to his own beat ; the other one tied a rope to a body, threw the other end of the rope to the other constable, pushed the body into the water, and it was hauled across and landed on the opposite bank, the second body being treated in like manner. The long walk was saved, notice was given to the coroner, and an inquest held. Nothing was said in evidence about the bodies having been first pulled out in the other coroner's liberty. In each case a verdict of "accidentally drowned" was returned, and the old worn-out constable believed he had done a good stroke of business by passing the bodies from one district to another.

For a recapitulation of the cases of undiscovered murder we can find no space. Murder does not always "out;" but it is better that a criminal should escape, with the terror of his evil conscience to be his abiding punishment, than for the innocent to be convicted upon circumstantial evidence. There is nothing so much to be mistrusted as this kind of testimony, although it is very often the strongest which can be put before a jury.

## CHAPTER XXII.

## "FROM INFORMATION RECEIVED."

The usual formula—How information is given—A coining family—A pocket-picking preacher—Prisoners betray their accomplices—The German Embassy plot—A jealous woman trapped into confession—£365 hidden in a pair of bellows—Police "shadowing"—Police "informations"—Pawnbrokers' lists—Telegraphs and street alarms—The *Police Gazette*—Police portraiture—The Dublin *Hue and Cry*—Backing warrants—How they are served—A warning.

WHATEVER the case in which the police officer may be engaged, the formula of "From information received" is generally the opening of his evidence. How, when, and where the information was acquired, is no part of his policy to disclose. It is sufficient to divulge that from the information in his possession it has enabled him to place the case in a lucid and fair way before the Bench or a judge and jury.

A robbery of ostrich feathers was reported to the police, and suspicion was entertained of a girl employed in the establishment. The writer happened to know that the daughter of a family who were considered respectable was a companion of this girl. He went to the house in search of information which might have given a clue to the guilt of the other girl, but left the house without obtaining any hint whatever.

The same evening, the officer visited a public-house opposite, when one of the chamber-maids said, " I saw you go this morning into ——'s house, and whilst you were there Amelia White put a box out of their attic window upon the leads. I thought I would tell you ; but, for goodness' sake, don't bring me into any bother." The detective promised not to do so, and kept his word. The same night he again called at White's, and found the box, as stated, containing about £20 worth of feathers. Amelia and her companion were apprehended. One blamed the other, both were convicted, and all " from information received."

Once the writer brought to justice a whole family of base-coin makers and utterers, through the father having flogged one of his own children, who complained and showed the mark of punishment his parent had inflicted. The lad said, " Oh, sir, my father is a bad man ; he buys spoons, melts them in a ladle, and makes bad shillings." This was quite sufficient for the writer, who made no inquiries of the lad. He waited and watched, caught the family at their work of coining, and had them all convicted. It was never known how the information was received.

A new line of railway was in course of construction near to a large town, in which there was a good meat market, frequently visited by the navvies. Picking pockets was common on the Saturday nights. No one was caught, although the police were dissatisfied with themselves. A rough but honest navvy came and said, " I hear you have a good deal of ' pocket touching ' on Saturday nights. If you will promise me to keep a secret, I will tell you something worth knowing." The promise was given, and he said, " We have a

man who works in our gang, and who is a local preacher and Scripture reader on Sundays. He is nothing but a real 'hook.' He has been convicted for pocket-picking. He's the man; look after him." We did so, and placed a woman in his way; he picked her pocket, and he was caught with the purse and money in his hand. He had been previously convicted, and was a sanctimonious humbug. He was sent for trial, and several convictions were recorded against him. Found guilty, he was sentenced to seven years' penal servitude, all "from information received."

Many prisoners who have been convicted and are undergoing punishment have divulged secrets by the knowledge of which gangs of notorious thieves have been broken up. No one knew how the information had been acquired. It would never do to disclose generally how information has been received. The police should rarely divulge how they obtain their knowledge. Sometimes it is procured by answers innocently given to indirect inquiries, but which confirms the suspicion entertained. Frequently it is by the betrayal of a companion in crime; whilst in other cases women are employed who act as Delilahs to their Samsons.

Were detective officers to make a practice of disclosing how they received their information, the good old formula would have to be discontinued, as there would be no necessity for the further use of "From information received."

Sometimes, however, the means are revealed, and it is clear from these revelations that the police are bound to use considerable caution in dealing with informers.

The evidence given in connection with the alleged plot to blow up the German Embassy in London, in 1883, brought out the fact that detectives were in close contact with men known to be associates of swindlers, and whom they addressed as "My dear friend." Through such men information was obtained by which a great jewel robbery was traced. Naturally, when the informers pretended to know of the plans of certain Nihilist and Socialist conspirators to destroy the Embassy, the police, to whom the information was communicated, were in danger of being themselves trapped, as the tenor of the cross-examination in court showed. One of the accused was admittedly in the pay of the police, as a spy upon foreigners. The object of the explosion was not political, but to obtain a reward in the event of suspicion falling, as was arranged should be the case, upon an innocent man. However, when the explosives were prepared, they were prematurely discovered in a house to which the police obtained access. One of the prisoners who resided at this house said he was the victim of a conspiracy on the part of others. The trial ended in a disagreement of the jury, and at the next sessions the prisoners were discharged, the Crown entering a *nolle prosequi*.

The detection of crime has not infrequently to be prefaced by devices, which to many might perhaps be regarded as plain deviations from the hard-and-fast lines of veracity and rectitude. Let the following case illustrate what is meant. Some years ago, a well-to-do cattle-dealer was in the habit of visiting a cattle market at a country town. It was notorious that he invariably

carried a large amount of cash on his person, and that in the evening he was found strolling about the town, "just for a constitutional," he would say. On one of these perambulations he met with a lady fair, whose fascinations he could not withstand, and whom he ultimately accompanied in the direction of the parish church. Here the woman abstracted from a pocket underneath the gentleman's waistcoat a large jean purse or wallet, which the owner always took the precaution to use as a pillow when he retired to rest. This wallet, with its £500 of crisp bank-notes, was quietly passed to a confederate, who was stationed at the other side of the church wall, of course out of sight.

Thieves have many ways of communicating with each other when all is right. Coughs are sometimes given. Something of this kind occurred in this instance. The duped man and the fair, plausible, attractive Matilda separated, and in about an hour the cattle-dealer discovered his loss. Then of course there was a "hue and cry," and from the description given of the woman the police had no difficulty in recognizing the handiwork of Matilda — and her "fancy" man, George —. Without delay, Matilda was arrested and searched; her domicile was also "turned up," but not a trace of the notes could be found. Then followed the same processes with her paramour, but all of no avail.

George — was a "holder-up" at cattle markets for dealers, and knew all those who carried a good amount of money about with them. The woman having been identified by the victimized gentleman, and George having been seen in her company before the robbery,



they were brought before the magistrates time after time and remanded ; but there was the " missing link " in the evidence, and both were eventually discharged. Still the police were not satisfied, because the robbery was exactly Matilda's and George's " graft." A close watch was set on the two, but a more astute pair of rogues never lived. Their daily habits continued to be exactly the same as before. There was no extravagance in new hats or dresses ; in fact, to use the thieves' parlance, they lived " shallow."

Observation was kept upon these people for eight weeks, without the slightest clue being obtained, and for a time there appeared to be a very remote chance of any solution of the mystery. At last, however, the detectives hit upon an idea which was submitted to, and received the approval of, the chief constable, and the case was worked to a successful issue by the following means.

It was known that George was in the habit of occasionally visiting women of the same class as his own Matilda ; and it was one of these, a rather superior kind of woman, who became the confederate of the police. She placed herself in George's way frequently, and in the end easily persuaded him to accompany her home, and arrangements were made for him to remain all night. The detectives were on the alert, and despatched another woman, who was " in the know," to inform Matilda of the faithlessness of her paramour. She had long been suspicious of her dear George, and disturbances had been far from rare. On being told of his whereabouts, she rushed to the house, the door of which was open, bolted upstairs, and into the presence of the delinquents. Her jealous fears

were now confirmed. A scene ensued ; she went into hysterics. The police took advantage of the uproar, and they, too, put in an appearance. Whilst one sympathized and soothed her, the other kept watch over George for the time being.

The first paroxysms of Matilda's grief having subsided, she commenced her upbraidings. Her rival thereupon assured her she had no right there, as George had for some time visited her, and had promised to marry her. This was exactly what the police required, and infuriated Matilda began "rounding" on George. "You scoundrel, villain, thief, bully !" she cried. "You put me on to Mr. —, and got me to steal his bag and notes, which I handed to you when you were laid behind the wall in the churchyard. They are safe, and I will tell the officers where they are, if I get seven years for it." Turning to the police, she added, "He fastened them inside a pair of old bellows, which he bought for the purpose, and pawned them for fourpence. I have the pawn-ticket at home ; it is in a teapot, and, if you like, I will get it for you."

George, all this time, protested his innocence. Both were re-apprehended. Matilda's house was searched, the ticket found as described, the bellows opened in the presence of the pawnbroker, and there, sure enough, were found £365 in notes, some of which were identified by the man who was robbed. Evidence that George had purchased and pawned the bellows was forthcoming, also that he and Matilda had been seen together immediately before the robbery. They were committed for trial. When arraigned, the male prisoner pleaded "Not guilty ;" the woman, "Guilty." To complete the case, she was put into the

witness-box and gave her evidence on the whole matter. George had not the ghost of a chance; he was found guilty, and, previous convictions having been recorded against him, he was sentenced to penal servitude for seven years. Matilda was imprisoned until the rising of the court. In this way a clever, deep, designing thief was entrapped and prevented from doing further harm to society for a tolerably long period. Who shall say the end did not justify the means?

The woman we call Matilda persisted to the end in her assertion that £365 was the full amount of the stolen notes, and not £500, as stated by the prosecutor.

The Yankees are very fond of talking of police "shadowing." Mr. Monro once told us that he believed a guilty man would find out that he was shadowed in less than three days, if he kept on the move. Keeping constant surveillance of a person who remains in one place is easy. Dynamiters have been regularly shadowed at their lodgings and at hotels, and valuable information has been obtained in this way; but in most cases the suspected men knew that they were under observation.

In addition to the various methods and devices which ingenuity may suggest, as applicable to the solution of certain cases, there is, of course, regular machinery for assisting detectives and the uniform police. For instance, there is the "information," as it is called in London. The earliest edition is also termed the "Morning State."

An "information" is a list of persons whose apprehension is sought, together with the particulars of their

crimes. Details are briefly given of property lost and found, of persons missing or recovered, and of animals which have strayed. The lists are compiled and printed at Great Scotland Yard, and issued to every station in the Metropolitan and City Police Districts, four times a day, at 9.30 a.m., 1.30 p.m., 6.30 p.m., and 10.30 p.m. The edition circulated at midday contains everything relating to criminal matters, and the notices received from the constabulary forces of the country at large. The orders relating to traffic, promotions, and degradations are also printed on the premises, together with the pawnbrokers' list.

To every pawnbroker and established second-hand goods dealer in the Metropolitan Police District is issued daily a list of all articles stolen or lost, possessing any distinctive mark or identity. These lists also contain a description of articles stolen in the provinces. They are prepared with care, and all unnecessary words are omitted, to make the description striking. Engravings are sometimes added.

These printed lists may, of course, be supplemented by telegraphic messages at any moment. In nearly every station in the metropolitan district there is an A B C instrument, and by the adoption of a plug-switch system, the circuit may be considerably shortened. There are now two routes available for messages, thereby saving time in the transmission. Police orders are frequently put on the wire. In London, ordinary telephones have not been adopted, on the ground that they are not sufficiently secret; but there is not much secrecy about a system which obliges one man to read off a telegram in order that another may take it down in writing, for whoever is standing near can hear it. A

system of alarm-posts is under trial at Islington, where telephones, in conjunction with other apparatus, have been introduced. The police, as well as some householders, hold keys to these posts, and by means of them it is possible for the man on "fixed point" duty to communicate with the station for advice or assistance, and he can call for an ambulance when required.

Besides these circulars, there is issued twice a week in London, under the editorship of Dr. Anderson, the *Police Gazette*, originally started in 1828, which owes its improved form to the enterprise of Mr. Howard Vincent, when Director of Criminal Investigation. It is supplied gratis to the police forces of the kingdom. Printed on good paper, the number before us consists of twelve pages. The front is occupied by the statement of the regulations under which notices are inserted, together with the War Office list of deserters and absentees from Her Majesty's service. Thus here is one item in the list of 163, 152 of which belong to the army and militia, and 11 to the navy:—

"Office number 31. J—— H., (regimental number) Royal Fusiliers; born at Newington, Surrey; labourer, age 19½, height 5 ft. 8 in.; dark complexion, dark brown hair, brown eyes; regimental clothes; deserted from ——— date; marks, sailor on arm, girl tattooed on chest."

The body of the newspaper is filled with classified particulars of apprehensions sought in the Metropolitan Police District, counties, and cities and boroughs; also, in the same order, particulars of persons in custody; and again, of property stolen. Very great prominence is given to certain descriptions of the supposed White-

chapel murderer, and of certain facts in connection with the ghastly discoveries in the new police buildings. In eight cases, woodcuts, boldly executed, purport to give likenesses of the runaways. We say "purport," because these woodcuts are sometimes reprinted to illustrate handbills, and it is notorious that in the case of Currell, who evaded arrest for about a fortnight after he had murdered his sweetheart in Hoxton, the likeness was a bad one. In that case, however, the artist had simply a "tin-type" photo, of very small size, to guide him. Sometimes the police had not even this slender hint, and, as in the instance of Lefroy, they were glad to avail themselves of the sketch of the man, drawn from memory by a gentleman who had frequently conversed with him. The authorities have never ventured so far as to publish a hypothetical sketch portrait, as did the *Daily Telegraph*, from descriptions given of the Whitechapel murderer. In fact, the Scotland Yard officials took care to notify that these drawings were not authorized by them. Whenever the photograph of a suspect is a good one to commence with, it is very fairly reproduced, although in London any assistance from photography or "process" engraving is declined. In this respect provincial forces are ahead of the Metropolitan Police.

Drawings are given of diamond brooches stolen, the plan being to show the pattern of the stones and settings in white on a black ground. It is not artistic, but it is effective.

Curious and interesting are the bare facts which are inserted in the columns of the *Police Gazette*. Here we find the description of a Polish Jew, a lunatic, "wanted" for "failing to report." A publisher's clerk

has absconded ; a commercial traveller has embezzled ; and others are wanted for frauds. Personal appearance, dress, antecedents, mode of swindling, previous convictions—all are stated in black and white. A strange collection of exposures ! One man has, apparently, turned his attention to stopping children on errands, and robbing them of their money ; another man, with a woman, has been living in furnished apartments on credit, and then disappearing ; a third impersonates the son of a Scotch professor, and victimizes ministers ; a fourth gives almost worthless cheques, and clears off with the change ; a fifth gets up as an American priest and obtains money by false representation ; a sixth opens a bogus debt-collecting office ; and a seventh imposes upon country lads by promising them situations, and fleeces them of the money to obtain the birth certificate which he states is indispensable.

Similar to the *Police Gazette*, but of smaller size and less pretentious "get-up," is the Dublin *Hue and Cry*. Here we find particulars of a man arrested, on suspicion of being the American priest above mentioned. Other publications, such as the *West Riding Police Reports*, are issued by many forces, and are circulated for the information and use of the police, and, confidentially, for the guidance of pawnbrokers, clothes dealers, and others.

By means of these warnings and intimations, apprehensions are frequently made, and in this way the police of the United Kingdom mutually assist each other. London helps the country, and in turn the country aids London in the vindication of justice.

Warrants of a metropolitan police magistrate run

over the whole of the United Kingdom, as also do those of the aldermen of the City of London. Other warrants require "backing" or endorsing for execution within a new district. In towns of importance, an officer is appointed by the chief constable to serve summonses, notices, and processes, and occasionally to execute warrants for minor offences. The policeman selected must be a man of discretion and good temper, for his work is at times unpleasant, as the resentment felt by the person upon whom the service is made is frequently vented upon the unwelcome visitor, who is generally in plain clothes and unobtrusive. In certain neighbourhoods there will be noticed a spirit of resistance, and in such places it is wise that the object in view should not be apparent. Persons summoned do not always come before the court, as arrangements are made in matters such as the paying of rates, and others not of a criminal nature, and publicity is thereby avoided. The officer's duty is to endorse all warrants, summonses, and processes, and see that all costs are entered thereon before proving service. There are no stated hours, for the policeman is often at work both early and late, as he has to make services when he can find an opportunity. When going to another town or district to execute a warrant, he must have it endorsed, or "backed," as it is termed, by a magistrate for that district; then he is perfectly safe; otherwise an action might be brought against him for an illegal arrest. Whilst standing in a fold-yard with his back towards a stone trough filled with water, an officer, who was reading a warrant previous to taking a man into custody, received a blow from the man which knocked him over backwards and wedged him into the



trough. He was unable to extricate himself, and was assisted out by a farmer and his sons. The delinquent effected his escape, but was afterwards apprehended and punished for the assault, as well as for non-payment of the arrears for which the warrant was granted. The moral is, "Apprehend the man first, and read the warrant afterwards."

## CHAPTER XXIII.

## BURGLARS, ARMED AND OTHERWISE.

The class who use revolvers—Orrock—Double patrols—Peace, the burglar—His strange career—Wright and Wheatley—Murder of Inspector Simmons—Sergeant Barker—Jackson at Strangeways—Muswell Hill outrage—Curious detections—A “professional”—The safe burglary—Where cracksmen hide their tools—Mr. Vincent’s views—Mr. Monro’s warning—How burglaries are “put up”—The method fully explained—The receiver—Clever arrests—The pigeon-cote—“Flying the kite”—A dictionary of thieves’ slang.

**B**URGLARY is an offence which has a strange fascination to the ordinary mind. A house-breaker is regarded as a commonplace criminal, but a burglar is a romantic character. And yet there is very little difference between the two, for the house-breaker becomes a burglar when he enters a dwelling-house between the hours of nine p.m. and six a.m. The burglar works by night, and the darkness gives to his deeds an additional terror. Furthermore, there have been several famous burglars, some of whom have not scrupled to shoot down the police.

In London there have been from time to time reports of violence perpetrated by armed burglars, or, more properly speaking, by men who have used arms whilst surprised in the act of burglary. Regular or profes-

sional hands seldom have recourse to firearms; it is the novices, with some notable exceptions, who hold human life so cheap. Thus Orrock, the man who shot Constable Cole at Dalston, on December 1, 1882, was a member of the congregation of the Baptist Chapel which he attempted to rob, and he attended the Bible class. He married a young lady whom he met at the chapel, and they lived together until he was arrested on a charge of burglary and sentenced to twelve months' imprisonment. It was this circumstance which gave the police an opportunity of tracing to his ownership the soft hat and the chisel which Orrock left behind in the chapel, and of obtaining the evidence of two of his companions who were also in prison.

Inspector Glass, who had charge of this case, has often remarked that the man who in reality put the police in possession of their information to this day is ignorant that he disclosed to them this knowledge. Orrock was not executed until 1884, and it was in this year that double patrols (since discontinued) were arranged in lonely places, and that revolvers were issued to the police. Whistles were also supplied. Subsequent to the murder of Police-constable Atkins in private grounds at Kingston, on September 22, 1881, the visiting of such places was forbidden.

The affray took place at 1.15 a.m. The burglars had removed the bar from a small window leading to a lavatory near the front of the mansion, when the constable disturbed them, and he was shot in three places. A lantern and jemmy were found in the house, and a reward was offered without result.

There was an earlier instance of shooting a policeman than this, and it forms one of the exceptions to

the rule that a cracksman discards the use of the revolver. In 1876, a civil engineer of the name of Dyson was shot at Sheffield. Three years afterwards, Peace, the renowned burglar, was sentenced to death at Leeds, and was executed for the murder of Mr. Dyson, in Armley Gaol, in February, 1879. He had been arrested whilst committing a burglary at Blackheath, when he seriously wounded a constable with shots from his revolver before he was secured. It will be recollected how he attempted to escape by jumping from a train travelling at fifty miles an hour, near to Sheffield. He was caught by the boot, as he was leaping out of the window, by one of the warders. The boot came off, and Peace tumbled head first on the footboard, and then on the line. When discovered he was insensible, and was lying on the spot where he had fallen. It was ascertained that Peace, after the murder of Dyson, had committed a burglary at Hull, and then had lived at Nottingham. Afterwards he came to London, where he took up his abode in Lambeth. A number of audacious robberies were perpetrated, and Peace removed to Greenwich, where he occupied a fine house, which he furnished in expensive style, passing himself off as a "gentleman of independent means," like many others of his profession have done since.

More burglaries alarmed the inhabitants of Greenwich, and then Peace removed to Peckham, where he lived in a good house with two mistresses and a servant. In the drawing-room there was a suite of walnut valued at fifty guineas, a Turkey carpet, mirrors, a painted bijou piano, and a Spanish guitar, said to be the property of a countess. There were

more burglaries at Peckham. Peace had a passion for musical instruments, and he acquired so many that he was obliged to lend some to a neighbour, not having house-room for the collection.

When tried at the Central Criminal Court for the attempted murder of Police-constable Robinson, at whom he had fired four shots, Peace appealed to the judge to have mercy upon him, saying that he did not know the pistol was loaded. "He felt that he had disgraced himself; all that he had meant to do was to frighten the constable."

Another well-known burglar, who in January, 1884, surprised the detective who had arrested him in Great Chapel Street, Westminster, by leaping six feet from the floor through an open window in harlequin fashion, also carried a revolver. The man was recaptured after a chase over hoardings and vacant land, for he fell from a height of twenty-five feet into the Metropolitan District Railway, and fractured his arm and leg.

In July, 1884, there was a sensational arrest in Hoxton. James Wright and William Wheatley, notorious thieves, having been detected in a burglary, with the proceeds in their possession, took refuge in a churchyard, and Wheatley was secured. Thereupon Wright fired three shots at Police-constable Garner, and being pursued by Police-constables Snell and Clifford, he shot the former. Then ensued a desperate chase by Clifford. Wright threatened to shoot everybody who approached, until he reached Nile Street, which is a renowned haunt of burglars. Scaling a ladder which had been left against the wall, he gained access to the roofs, and for an hour the ruffian leaped from roof to roof, brandishing his weapon, and using

tiles as missiles to pelt about twenty men who had assisted the police. Ultimately he was pounced upon by Sergeant Walsh and secured, and he was nearly torn to pieces by the infuriated mob. It was found that each prisoner wore a leather belt, concealed under the coat, and passing beneath the waistcoat in front through extra large button-holes. Wright was identified as the man who had shot, but not fatally, Police-constable Chamberlain at Islington. For a while the bullet remained in the officer's thigh. Chamberlain was rewarded by £20 from the commissioner, £10 from the Bow Street Police Court Reward Fund, and £140 from the inhabitants of Islington.

To return to Garner and Snell, they were removed to St. Bartholomew's Hospital, and were there visited by the Home Secretary. On their recovery they were well rewarded. Wheatley was tried at the Central Criminal Court, and was sentenced to twenty years' imprisonment. Wright was sentenced for life, he having acted in a violent manner throughout the proceedings, and on one occasion he nearly broke from the prison van, or "Black Maria."

It was in March, 1885, that Inspector Simmons, of the Essex Constabulary, was shot at Romford by one of three men he had been watching. One of the men was a returned convict, and another a man who had already undergone a term of imprisonment for burglary, and against whom it was also alleged that he had been concerned in shooting at two Gloucestershire policemen. It was discovered afterwards that the murderers were connected with the famous Netherby Hall murder and burglary.

In July, 1885, there was a desperate struggle at

Kensington between a young constable and a masked burglar, whom he surprised upon the roof. Four shots were fired at the officer, who was found insensible.

Holland, another constable, was assailed by three burglars, in St. Marylebone Churchyard, in August, 1886, and he was shot in the leg by one of them. The burglars had barely commenced their work of forcing the door when the officer came upon them. The fight was a very severe one.

Early in the morning of March 30, 1887, Police-constable Barker, whilst patrolling his beat at Finchley, discovered two men endeavouring to break into the residence of Dr. Turle. Their design was frustrated and they decamped. They were followed by the officer for some distance, and ultimately to the Great Northern Railway, where the constable was brutally assaulted and laid on the line insensible, a proceeding resulting in his leg being severed by a passing train. Barker was promoted by the commissioner to the rank of sergeant; he received a handsome pension, and the general public showed the feelings entertained for his devotion to duty by subscribing a sum of £700. His health is restored, and he is now able to follow a light employment.

In the summer of 1888, Jackson, or to call him by his true name, Charles Williamson Firth, it will be recollected, murdered Assistant Warder Webb at Strangeways Gaol, Manchester, from which he broke out, repeating the exploit he had performed at Wakefield in 1883. He was at large for some time, and arrests of suspected individuals were made in almost all parts of the country, the usual "hue and cry" being raised. For a while there was doubt as to his identity,

but from a hint the Manchester city police received, Jackson and Firth were shown to be the same. For many years his career had been one of crime, and it was a relief when he was arrested at Bradford for breaking into a house. He was hanged for the murder of Webb at Strangeways.

Early in the present year, the mansion of a wholesale silversmith on Muswell Hill, an isolated position, was attacked by a small gang, and, being discovered, the burglars fired six shots at the householder and his sons, one of the latter being struck twice by bullets. The thieves made off, but suspected men were cleverly arrested the next night in Shoreditch, and small articles resembling the property stolen were found in their possession. A fourth man was apprehended in the south of England, whither he had been traced, notwithstanding that he had doubled like a hare on his journey. One of the gang afterwards made a clean confession. As it happened, the police were keeping strict watch upon the district for horse-stealers, but the miscreants succeeded in reaching London. This burglary was an instance of the system pursued by the "ladder" or portico thief, and the house seems to have been selected at haphazard, without preliminaries. The outrage once more drew attention to the desirability of arming the police with firearms in place of sticks, which they prefer, and the necessity of replacing the heavy regulation boots with noiseless soles. The use of the cat, which was so effectual in putting down the garroter in 1862, was also advocated.

There have been in the metropolis, from time to time, curious detections of burglars. One of the profession passed himself off as a doctor, and resided at

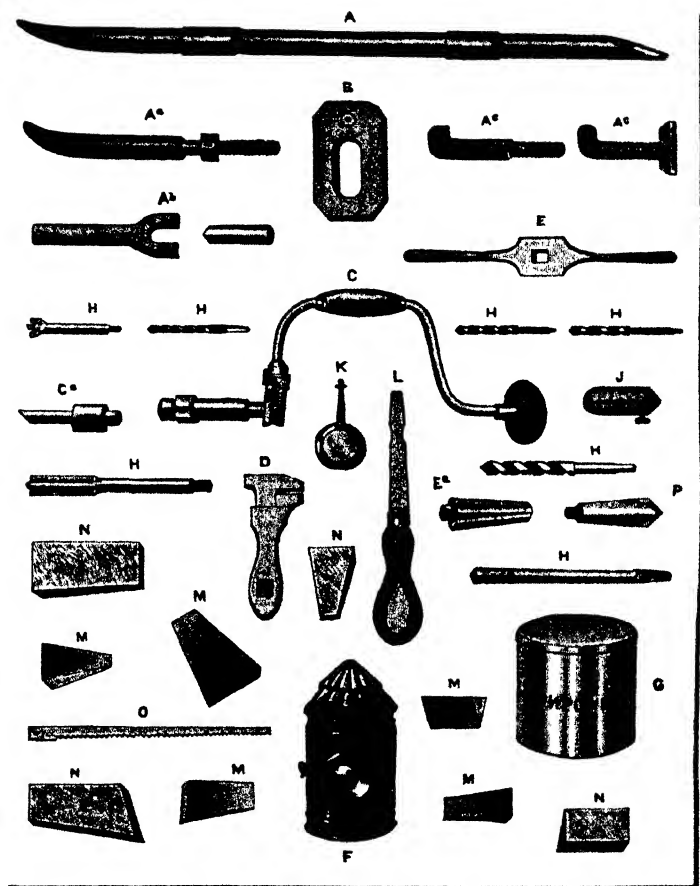


the time of his arrest in a house adjoining a West End square, with a brass plate on the door. Then there was what was known as the "safe" burglary. A heavy safe, weighing 7 cwt., was taken out of a dairy near the British Museum, on a small cart which was driven into the warehouse. Luckily the constable on the beat had taken note of a vehicle, in charge of no one, having inside a two-wheeled trolley, and he had entered the address in his pocket-book. At this address the missing safe, partly broken open, was recovered, and several arrests in due course were made, disclosing a direct connection between thieves and receiver. The set of safe-burglar's tools, of which an illustration is given, is the most complete which has ever fallen into the hands of the police.

Where do burglars hide their tools? The question may be answered from the experience of Detective Campbell of Bradford, who in two instances discovered house and shop breaking implements hidden in a wall near to a thief's house. This officer also found stolen cloth concealed in the pulpit of a chapel. The thieves had entered the chapel with a key, got down a grate near the pulpit under the floor, which was boarded, cut a piece out of the planks under the pulpit, and then put the goods inside, replacing the flooring. On another occasion, pieces of cloth were hidden under tombstones.

Mr. Vincent says—

"The English police labour under further and even greater disadvantages than the Scotch or any foreign force in the extraordinary facilities which are tolerated by law for the ready disposal of stolen property. This is especially serious in this country; when



### A SAFE-BURGLAR'S KIT.

*(The whole were conveyed in a handbag.)*

- A Little Alderman, or Sectional Jemmy.
- Aa Spare Section.
- Ab Cleaver end, to be screwed into A.
- Ac Prisers.
- B Persuasion Plate, for obtaining leverage.
- C American Brace, or Drill.
- Cc Centre-bit.
- D Adjustable Spanner.
- E Wrench.
- Ea Rimer for Wrench, to enlarge holes.

- F Dark Lantern.
- G Gunpowder.
- H Various Drills, "twist" drills.
- J Lock for Drills (to hold them fast).
- K Oil-can.
- L Screw-driver.
- M Steel Wedges, with razor-like edges.
- N Wooden Wedges.
- O Saw for metal.
- P Countersink.



the most frequent crime is that of burglary. This is accounted for by the custom for nearly every family, possessing an income of, say, £100 a year, to live in a separate dwelling instead of in apartments in one large house, the only access to which is guarded day and night by a porter. The small houses are susceptible of attack, not only by reason of the poorness of the fastenings, the flimsy character of the locks and bolts, the absence of shutters, but also because they must in the nature of things be frequently left without any person in charge, when a door or window left open invites the hand of the passing tramp to some article within reach, who thereupon becomes in law a housebreaker or burglar, according to the hour of the theft. In the Metropolitan Police District, more than two-thirds of the housebreakings and burglaries reported are committed either in the absence of all the inmates, or through windows and doors carelessly left open or insecurely fastened. If the culprit is seen even for a second, and can be identified, his arrest is more than probable, but in the majority of cases he makes good his escape, unobserved by any person. The only evidence then by which his connection with the crime can be traced is the stolen property. At hundreds of places he can dispose of this without any previous arrangement or organized association with receivers of stolen goods, and not run any appreciable risk of being handed over to the police by the purchaser, who will be scrupulously careful for his own sake not to furnish any information."

It was one of the gravest charges against Sir C. Warren that he allowed burglaries, house and shop breakings, to rise to a considerably higher total than

the average of the preceding nine years. It is alleged that in this respect the Metropolitan Police District is less secure than other parts of the kingdom.

One of Mr. Monro's first notifications to the public, through the medium of the press, upon his assumption of the office of commissioner, was to issue a warning to tenants of isolated houses to maintain careful observation upon suspicious persons, and to take especial precautions between seven p.m. and half-past nine o'clock at night. For it was during the dinner-hour that burglars, whose desire was to carry off portable property, had entered mansions usually by means of a ladder. Mr. Monro recommended the use of thief-proof safes; and he stated that, in one case, wire had been employed to fasten the doors, as well as to stretch across the lawn, the object being to trip up and to hinder pursuers. Not long after the issue of this warning there were several jewel robberies.

It may be interesting to describe how a burglary is "put up," and what is the meaning of the expression "readying the job."

The preliminary to housebreaking, by day or by night, is for the burglars or cracksmen to "ready" the place, whether it be a shop, dwelling, office, or warehouse; that is, they find out the habits and ways of the occupiers or their servants. If a house is "spotted," some time elapses before all is ripe. First-class "cracksmen" scarcely ever select a place that is not likely to pay them for the risk they incur, unless there is, or they think there is, good prospect of large booty. There are many devices employed in getting information as to the interior arrangements of the establish-

ment intended to be entered. Supposing the gang consists of three or four persons, one is "put on" to court one of the servants, and by degrees he ferrets out what valuables there are, and where they are kept; and he also learns the positions of all the doors and windows in the basement, where the different passages lead to, when the household retire to rest, the habits of master and mistress, and whether they are orderly and temperate or the reverse.

Having gained the confidence of his *inamorata*, he makes himself at home, and cunningly manages to take impressions of all the keys he can get. At other times, when the family are out, he contrives to obtain a general survey of the house under the pretence of admiring it or the views from its windows. So far, so good. Another of the gang will watch the master off the premises; he will make his appearance with a good-sized book under one arm, and a roll of paper under the other; the servant appears to answer the door, and he inquires if the master is within, knowing well he is not. To the mistress, who comes instead, he says, "I have just called to see Mr. ——. I am an architect, and about to build a house on similar lines to yours. Will you oblige me by allowing me to take a glance over your premises?" at the same time professing to unroll his "plan." "Oh, with pleasure," is often the reply. Of course, the spy does not forget to take particulars of the interior of the house, and he is able to report to his pals what will be required in the shape of "tackling," whether long or short. "Long tackling" means a "stick" and a "betty," or, in plain words, a small crowbar with a wooden handle. "Short tackle" means

two sets of drawer "screws," "jemmies," picklocks, skeleton keys, wedges, gimlets, dark lantern, cork slippers, and nux vomica. These articles are very often carried in violin cases, and sometimes in a perambulator, with a baby "keeping them warm."

We once apprehended two men and a woman, and got them all convicted for having housebreaking implements in their possession. The woman had a child in a perambulator, and went some distance. When the coast was clear, the men came up, and she handed the tools to the thieves, who secreted them close to a mansion which the gang intended to enter.

Before an entrance is effected by clever burglars, they always ascertain the easiest way to escape, should they be disturbed. In thieves' parlance, the escape is called a "long jump," a "side jump," a "short jump," or a "back jump." A "long" jump is to drop from an upper story window ; a "short" jump is to slip out of one of the basement windows ; a "side" jump means retiring by the side door ; and a "back" jump, by the back door.

One of the first things burglars do, when they have got inside a house where gas is used, is to find the meter and turn it off. They then creep into the bedrooms like cats, find the matches and drop them into the wash-hand jug, and the candle, if there is any, is also put into the water. All jewellery is cleared out, pockets are searched as well as drawers, and when leaving the room, clothing, or anything else suitable, is placed in the doorway, and across the top step of the stairs. So that if any one in a hurry left the room, he or she would in all probability fall from the top of the stairs to the bottom. It has been known to old

thieves that some families, when they leave home to spend a few weeks at the seaside, have had all their silver plate packed up and left at their bankers. That is all right and very proper, and quite safe; but on their return home, the plate-chest having been brought back, the articles are taken out and placed ready for cleaning. Next morning, there is an uproar, for everything has disappeared.

All burglaries, with few exceptions, have been "put up." Weeks, and frequently months, have been spent before the "attack" has been made. Strange to say, most cleverly planned burglaries are carried out in such a way that detection does not immediately follow. How, then, is all this property disposed of? It is an old saying, but a true one, "If we had no receivers, we should have no thieves." This is a fact acknowledged by the law, for when brought to justice the sentence passed upon the receiver exceeds in severity that passed upon the thief. The readiness with which the thief can get rid of stolen property by transferring its custody to the receiver is the strongest incentive to stealing. These coadjutors of thieves are nearly always aware that a large robbery is contemplated, and are as anxiously awaiting the results as is a merchant the success or failure of a commercial enterprise. The receiver is on the *qui vive* to get possession of the proceeds of a robbery; he is strictly punctual in keeping his appointment at a rendezvous, and the thief knows he can rely upon him both as to secrecy and payment. To him are quickly handed over diamonds, plate, watches, and other valuables; he incurs a large amount of risk, and amply compensates himself by the terms on which he deals with the



original thief. It has been calculated that a burglar sells for £300 jewellery which had originally cost ten times as much. Once in his hands, jewels are taken from their settings; the settings, together with watch-cases, chains, bracelets, rings, pins, and other gold, are placed in a crucible and speedily melted to defy detection. Stones are frequently reset, and often find a market abroad, or are transferred to receivers over the seas. Very rarely indeed is a clever receiver secured by the police. Of cunning mind, he deals with one of a gang of thieves at a time, and then only with great caution.

Once, however, a receiver in a large way was outwitted and brought to justice. The late Mr. John Moss, a detective officer in the City of London Police, effected the business in this way. A man named Moses Moses, a general merchant, and by no means a poor man, apparently respectable, was strongly suspected by the police of being a receiver. Robberies were frequent, both on the river and in the City, and no detections were made. The police of the detective department were at their wits' end. Strongly suspecting Mr. Moses, but not having sufficient evidence to get out a search-warrant, the following dangerous expedient was resorted to. A man of low character was employed by the police, and instructed to break into the warehouse of Mr. Moses and remove goods from one part of the warehouse and hide them in another, leading Mr. Moses to the belief that he had been robbed. This annoyance he put up with until a third incursion had been made, when at last he gave information to the police. This was exactly what they wanted; it gave them the right of entry to the premises.

Detective officer Moss took other officers with him, and, under a pretence of making an examination, they came across an elephant's tusk which had been stolen. A thorough search was then made, and stolen property of every description, amounting to a large value, was recovered. Moses was apprehended, his private residence searched, and further valuables were found which had been reported stolen. He was tried, convicted, and sent to penal servitude for twenty years.

After some trouble, the writer once caught a receiver by stratagem. He was an old metal dealer—took in lead, brass, iron, junk, in fact, anything that came to hand. Some lead had been stolen from the roof of a church, and "planted" under a flat tombstone in the churchyard. It was there found; the pieces were marked, and a constable was put to watch it from inside the church. The thieves were seen to approach the place several times before the property was removed. One of them was sent for, and the particulars were elicited from him. The receiver lived at some distance from his place of business, and it was to his residence the lead was to be conveyed. Opposite to and overlooking his rooms, and attached to the blank wall of a house, was a pigeon-cote. Arrangements were made with the occupier of the house to allow a hole to be cut through the wall into the pigeon-cote, and a constable was placed there on the watch. The constable in the church saw the lead loaded into a cart by four persons, three of whom he could identify. The constable watching through the pigeon-cote saw it delivered at the receiver's residence. At his place of business the receiver was visited by the police, but could give no information about the

lead. A warrant was immediately obtained, and his residence searched. The lead was found, and the receiver and the three thieves were apprehended, committed for trial, and convicted.

There was one case where a dangerous gang were sentenced at York Assizes for robbery and burglary. One of them used to fly a kite as a warning to the others that policemen were about. When it was hauled down the stolen property was brought in. The kite fell into the hands of the police. It had a small flat lamp, to be attached at night, for use as a danger signal.

To close this chapter some specimens of thieves' slang may not be amiss.

A marine store dealer ...	...	A sea-swag bloke.
An associate ...	...	A pal, chum, silent.
A shirt ...	...	A mill-tog, flesh-bag, skin-cover, etc.
A shilling ...	...	A bob, breaky, deaner, midgic.
A drinking shop...	...	A boozing ken, lushing crib.
A person ...	...	A pig, mark, raw.
A policeman ...	...	A fly, Jack, B. D., slop, crusher, peeler, body-snatcher, raw lobster, tin ribs, stalk, danger signal, terror, etc.
A girl (old phrase) ...	...	A moll, doner.
A woman ...	...	A molt, finger, smilto, stuffy, Jomer.
An accomplice ...	...	A stalsman, blocker, riveter, edgeman.
A walk ...	...	A pad, ready-over, stride, foot-it.
A horse ...	...	A prad, nack, four-runner.
A passer of bad money...	...	A smasher, snide tickler.
A snuff-box (gold) ...	...	A red sneezer, nip-inside
A snuff-box (silver) ...	...	A white sneezer
A lady ...	...	A silkster, ostrich, peacock, old mark.
A purse ...	...	A skin, slide, elastic, poke.
A watch or watcher ...	...	A marking, stall, whisper, stump, crow.
A countryman ...	...	A yokel, Johnny Raw, splaw-foot, post-office.
A village ...	...	A wild province, silence, certain rest.
A mansion ...	...	A high game, baronial jug.
A castle ...	...	A blue-beard, P. and D., duck-coy sunk-before.

A public-house ... ..	A news-of-the-day, churchwarden, bell-ringer.
A cash-box ... ..	A Peter, compartment, case.
A share ... ..	Regular, split, drop.
A watch (gold) ... ..	A yack, super, thimble, clocks, jerry. "Nabs on" (hallmark).
A watch (silver) ... ..	Ditto.
A coat ... ..	An outer, over, top-cover, over-all.
A waistcoat ... ..	A fan, shirt-front cover.
A pair of trousers ... ..	Bags, leg-covers, sin-hiders.
A pair of boots ... ..	Stamps, prints, noisy pegs.
A pair of stockings ... ..	Leg-warmers.
A scarf and tie ... ..	An apple-guard, collar bent, front prop.
A billycock ... ..	A slouch, head-guard, wake.
A silk hat ... ..	A chimney-pot, long-sleeved top, concertina (broken).
Bad money (coin) ... ..	Gammy lower, snide, smash.
Bad or forged notes ... ..	Spondulacs, flimsies, cross-finneps.
Bacon ... ..	Tiger, Sheeney's fear, sawney.
Boys who creep into houses ...	Young gunniffs or gonophs, sneaks.
Catching ducks by a bait and hook... ..	Snaggling, wire-twisting, bill-holding.
Companions in crime ... ..	Mobsmen, old vultures.
Snatching from the hand, bag, or basket ... ..	Fly-hooking, disc-potting.
Sent for trial ... ..	Pulled.
Discharged before the magistrates ... ..	Turned up.
Acquitted at sessions or assizes	Clucked, turned out.
No bill ... ..	Usual speech not required (guilty, not guilty).
Guilty ... ..	Gonner.
Five years' penal servitude ...	Five stretch.
Linen ... ..	Snow.
Gin ... ..	Blue ruin.
Rum ... ..	Golden cream.
Brandy ... ..	Liver destroyer.
Bad whisky ... ..	Greek fire.
A glass of Irish whisky ...	A glister of fish-hooks.
To inform ... ..	To come it, to bark.
Fowl-stealing ... ..	Biped-gathering, beaker-hunting.
Umbrella menders ... ..	Rib-doctors, mushroom-fakers.
Cane-bottomed chair-menders	Easy fakers, cane-plaiters (weavers).
Shoplifting ... ..	Damper-drawing, bouncing.
To run away ... ..	Do a guy.
Going about barefoot ... ..	Shallow, padding the hoof.
A thieves' abode or rendezvous	A drum, matin bell, evening chimes.

Stealing horses ... ..	Nailing hacks.
Not to talk ... ..	Curb clapper, whip still, tongue glued.
Cattle-stealing ... ..	Moos shifting.
Sheep-stealing ... ..	Fleecy claming, May gathering, bleating marching.
Robbing drunken men ... ..	Reeling, dipping cloudy.
Drunken thief ... ..	Boozing gonoph, rusty-toucher.
To open a window ... ..	To lift the stare.
Stealing handkerchiefs from caps, inside coat-pocket ...	Touching the kitchen.
Finding money to defend prisoner ... ..	Getting up the mail.
A seller of small-tooth combs ...	Lodger removers.
Coiners ... ..	Bit-makers, snidemen, moulders.
On the treadmill ... ..	Grinding wind, on the steel, everlasting staircase.
Putting up a robbery ... ..	To pipe, to make ready, a plant.
Removing stolen property after it has been hidden by the thieves ... ..	Springing the plant, raising the swag.
Travelling by train ... ..	Spinning the rattler.
Robbing a County Court office	Running the ruler over the registrar.
Robbing a stamp office... ..	Removing Vic.
Changing names and numbers on watches ... ..	Re-christening thimbles.
Courting servant girls ... ..	Jomer-charming.
Getting to know all about the house ... ..	Snaking the tree of life.
Put-up robbery ... ..	On the job, Eliza smiles, going to marry.
Comic singer on duty ... ..	Busking George using soap.
Detected for tea-robbery ...	Floating capital, black tissue paper mixed with tea.
When charged never speak ...	Fight cocum.
Low shoes ... ..	Crab shells.
Housebreaking implements ...	Darkey, corks (shoes), black plasters (marks), quickly grown (false beard), alderman (large tool for opening safe), councillor (smaller tool), jemmy (tool for opening drawers), spinner (centre-bit), thumb-screw (gimlet), stout and thin (wedge for putting under door), square well prop (skeleton key), slippery (soap), readying Rover (poisoning dog), silent matches (deaf and dumb).

Stealing cheeses...	...	...	Working the moons.
Selling bad cheese at fairs	...	...	Gulling the mugs.
Circulating thieves' photos	...	...	Pushing the mugs round.
Back slang	...	...	For instance, say a firm is called Robins and Allard—reverse it, "Dralla <i>et</i> Snibor."
Receiver	...	...	A receiver of stolen goods is frequently found in the occupation of a small jeweller's shop, in a retired street. If he has a valuable gold watch passed to him, he "christens" it, that is, he adds a cypher to the number, or alters a figure so that the owner cannot swear to his pro- perty. The numeral 1. can be easily for instance, changed into a 4.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

## FORGERS.

Forgery once a capital offence—Vaughan executed (1758)—Mathison (1779)—Old Patch (1786)—Fauntleroy forgeries—Maynard the last to be executed (1829)—How I traced bank forgers—Mode of identification—Forgeries on the Bank of England (1873)—Tracking a post-office forger.

FORGERY is another of those crimes which is very popular with the novelist and his readers. It used to be a capital offence, and it requires considerable ingenuity. The flash Bank of England note has played a prominent part in criminal history, and the forgers have generally been remarkable people, whose skill would have served them in good stead if their talents had been turned to honest ends. Richard Vaughan, the first to commit forgery upon the Bank of England, was executed at Tyburn in 1758. He had been a linen-draper at Stafford, and the notes which he produced were poor imitations, and they could not fail to be otherwise, for they were fabricated in parts by different artists, none of whom knew for what purpose the work was intended. Twenty of the notes Vaughan deposited in the hands of a young lady to whom he was about to be married, as a proof that he possessed property. One of the engravers informed, and Vaughan was arrested.

In 1779, a Scotchman, Matthison, followed Vaughan's example, and commenced by forging a Lancashire note and then some Scotch. Copper had been substituted for wood, and Mathison applied himself to the imitation of Bank of England notes with success. He was detected because, one day, when the clerks were discussing the genuineness of some of his own forged bills, he asseverated that they were *bona fide*, although he had not been consulted. Suspicion was therefore directed towards him, and inquiry was made.

Old Patch, another celebrated forger, was a man of unrivalled ability. He practised his art in 1786, and his plan was to induce dupes to buy for him lottery tickets with his forged notes, whilst he waited outside the office in a coach, disguised as a feeble old man, wrapped in bandages, and with a patch over one eye. The servant having on one occasion been detained, a woman on the watch gave an alarm, and the coach drove away. Mr. Brank, as Old Patch called himself, disappeared, but the forgeries continued. The rogue made his own paper and ink, and with a private press worked the notes off, with the aid of his wife. For five years he remained undiscovered. Old Patch also altered the numbers of tickets, in exchange for which notes were given by the cashiers of the Bank. But the prince of forgers was soon to fall into the hands of Clarke, one of the Bow Street runners. A silversmith had lent to a Mr. Charles Price some plate, and had received as security a forged note; but, on inquiry being made, Mr. Price, who had passed as a wealthy stockbroker and lottery-office keeper, could not be found. He was traced from one lodging to another, and in spite of many disguises he was at last captured,



tobacconist's shop was the last visited, probably because of the delays which the conspirators began to experience in getting cash for the notes, and they suspected their danger.

However, the men were not watched, and the holders of the forged notes were oblivious of their loss until the following day, when some of the notes passed through the hands of the cashier of one of the Hull banks, who observed that an unusual number of notes on the Wakefield Bank were being presented. This circumstance led him closely to examine them. Finding that they were not printed on bank paper, he telegraphed to Wakefield, and the manager went to Hull and at once discovered the fraud.

Each note bore the signature of "S. Gurney Leatham," one of the partners of the firm, but, of course, not in his handwriting. The numbering was fictitious, and did not correspond with the numbers of the notes issued on the same date—March 31, 1879. Otherwise the forged notes were excellent copies of the genuine. They had been well thumbed to give them a worn appearance, and some had a forged post-office stamp upon them. On all of them, near the forged banker's signature, in exactly the same position, were the numbers 719/43. Every note was indorsed, but although the names used varied, they appeared to have been written by the same hand.

Minute inspection indicated that photographs had been taken of genuine notes, and the negatives transferred to gelatine, and thence to stone. Impressions from the stone had then been placed upon a well-grained block of pitch-pine, which had been rubbed with oil, and pressure applied to produce in the paper the appearance of a water mark.

Affairs were then in this position. We knew from the character of the paper, the identity of dates, numbers, and other details, that all the forged notes proceeded from one source. There was another additional advantage. Each witness had had a good opportunity of seeing the person who tendered the note, because he had had a conversation with him on the purchase of the article, and most of the witnesses could give a clear description of the man.

It would be tedious to describe at length the clerical work which had to be transacted. What are termed "route papers" had to be circulated. These notices contained a brief outline of the *modus operandi* pursued, and descriptions of two men who had uttered the notes at Hull, and also at Huddersfield, and at Bradford, during the next two days following. Attached to the circulars were photographs of the signatures endorsed on the back of the notes, and the request was added that these might be compared with the handwriting of persons who may have been in charge of the police of other towns at any time.

A route paper started on its travels, say, first to the Isle of Man, and the chief constable there would pass it on to Castletown Prison with the note "Signature not known;" from Castletown Prison the paper would be forwarded to the Dublin Metropolitan Police, where Mr. John Mallon would add his memorandum, "Signatures not recognized," and transmit the paper to Belfast. Still without result, it is sent from Belfast to Galway, and in turn to Limerick, Waterford, Cork, and finally back to Wakefield. By this time, taking the case of the paper before me, the document has become well creased, and adorned with the signatures

of eight or nine police officers. It has been three weeks travelling, and the only reward has been that no information of value can be obtained, either in the Isle of Man or Ireland.

As with Ireland, so with the rest of the United Kingdom, and even France, Germany, New York, and the United States generally had to be provided with the descriptions.

Then, as fresh facts came to light, the whole thing had to be done over again, and the following circular letter had to be forwarded to all forces :—

“ Chief Constable’s Office,  
“ 13th Dec., 18—.

“ *Re* FORGED NOTES.

“ SIR,

“ Further information respecting two men who passed a number of forged bank-notes at Hull on the 30th ultimo, and at Huddersfield and Bradford on the 1st and 2nd inst. :—

“ The one described as the tall man is fully 5 feet 11 inches high, 38 years ; slender figure, dark or black hair, whiskers, and moustache, a small space shaven on chin and under, whiskers not bushy, rather wavy and straggling, dark piercing eyes, speaks rather slowly and correctly ; dressed in a dark tight-fitting overcoat, dark trousers, silk hat, dark scarf with breast-pin and black kid gloves—one of which he left behind—not a large size for so tall a man. He is no doubt a frequenter of race-courses, gambling-houses, and an associate of high-class thieves and forgers. Was accompanied by a tall, stout, good-looking woman ; dark hair and fresh complexion ; dressed in dark ulster and black hat with

feather ; had several rings on her fingers, and wore ear-rings.

"The other man, described as short and stout, is about 35 years of age, 5 feet 5 inches high, fresh complexion, light brown hair—cut short—whiskers, and moustache, clean shaven on chin and well up the sides of face ; thick neck, rather prominent eyes, corpulent, and looks horsey. Dressed in a drab short top-coat, light trousers, and black billycock hat.

"Please circulate these descriptions amongst the officers in charge of divisions in your force.

"I am, sir, your obedient servant,

"CHAS. T. CLARKSON,

"C.C."

Several failures had to be recorded in London, Glasgow, Wales, Birmingham, and Liverpool ; but within five weeks of the uttering, we succeeded in defining a photograph of a man suspected, which was forwarded to Hull to be shown to the persons victimized. A month later, I procured two more photographs, one of which, strange to say, was identified at Bradford, Huddersfield, and Hull as that of the taller man who had passed the notes. The witnesses, however, must have been mistaken, for these men were not the actual utterers.

Meanwhile an investigation was proceeding upon sources of information which cannot be disclosed in full. A certain well-known thief, receiver, and forger was suspected of having had the notes manufactured, and to have placed them in the hands of dupes. He appeared to have considerable means at his disposal, and from his associations it was deemed advisable to

watch him constantly. For some months he was under surveillance, before a clue could be obtained. Two men were frequently seen in his company. This man acted as the "go-between," and kept his dupes in ignorance of the manufacturers of the notes. So much was learned by dint of continual observation.

A reward of £200 had been offered, and the police had the services of outside agents who were in the position to worm out the secrets of the gang. One of these individuals wrote that he "knew one thief that used to work with this mob," and he wanted to give him a call, as he might hear something. He had been, he said, to Leeds as promised, but could hear nothing "cracked," so he asked the parties no questions. He added, "I stood treat all day for four of the most noted travellers, and all I could hear was, there was more 'smash' and 'fins' doing now than ever, but they had been doing smash, and had had to do a 'scooper' from somewhere."

In course of time we succeeded in locating the principal utterer, described as the tall man. His arrest could have been effected much earlier than was actually the case, for, by methods which he little suspected, his doings were revealed to us; but his apprehension was postponed in order that the names and addresses of others of the gang might be obtained. He had been in prison several times, and had undergone a term of penal servitude.

At last two other men were tracked. They all lived at Manchester, but some distance apart. Their wives frequently met in the market, and in this way

the men communicated with each other. All three were arrested; a fourth man concerned was not.

Jerome Caminada, detective officer of Manchester, captured the men at half-past eleven o'clock one night, when it was believed that they were in bed.

I received the three prisoners into my custody at Manchester, on August 30, after ten months of anxiety and labour. The second man wrote an address upon an envelope in my presence, and the handwriting corresponded with that of the endorsements on the forged notes.

As the question which would be raised at the trial would turn mainly upon identification, it was necessary to take precautions. When the prisoners were at Wakefield, six men of about the same size, age, and dress as the accused were brought into the station yard, and the prisoners were told to take their places among them wherever they pleased. They did so, and the witnesses were then introduced one by one, to see if they could pick out the guilty men. They all identified the right men except one witness, who pointed to a private individual. When a witness had seen the men, he was not permitted to communicate with the other witnesses until afterwards. This method of identification I explained to Mr. Justice Cave at the York Assizes, and his lordship complimented me upon the fair way I had acted towards the accused. The principal was sentenced to fourteen years' penal servitude, and his accomplices respectively to seven and ten years.

In 1873, the Bank of England forgeries attracted a great deal of attention. Three men were sentenced to

penal servitude for life. During their detention at Newgate, an attempt was made to procure their escape, and the warders were watched by detectives. A part of the plan was to rescue the prisoners in the dock whilst the trial was proceeding. They were charged with forging and uttering sixteen bills of exchange, and the acceptances and endorsements, with intent to defraud the Bank of England. Ninety-four bills were handed to the Western Branch of the Bank, and the prisoners succeeded in getting £100,000. They discounted a genuine bill of Rothschild's for £4,700 first of all, and then different batches of forged bills were sent from Birmingham. The accused were possessed of considerable means, of good education, and spoke several languages. Having got credit with the Bank by extensive transactions, a large number of genuine bills were paid in, which maintained their credit and also served as models for forgery. It was proposed that when the forged bills matured, the principal conspirators should be out of the country. They represented that they had a considerable business at Birmingham, whence the bills were sent to the Bank. Success was most complete, until one day two bills were handed to the Bank on which the date of acceptance had by an oversight of the forger been omitted, and reference being made to the acceptor, the fraud was discovered.

We may now relate a personal experience relating to another branch of forgery, and showing what perseverance may sometimes be needed to track a man down.

Some years ago, there was a forgery and robbery

of post-office orders at a post-office in Ireland. It appeared that a man, about thirty-three years of age, tall, handsome, and well educated, had been in a cavalry regiment in the name of "Henry," which was not his real name. He had been out in India and other parts. Eventually, with his regiment, he went to Ireland, where he received his discharge and resumed his own name. It was not long before he formed an acquaintance and married a young woman who kept the post-office in question. For some little time all went well ; but he, doubtless tiring of the quiet life, and having possessed himself of the knowledge of post-office routine, took advantage of his opportunities to commit the offence of forgery and robbery. He possessed himself of a money-order bundle, filled up—from the back part of the book—a number of orders on persons supposed to be residing in various towns, which he himself retained ; the counterfoils he sent off to the post-offices at which the orders were to be payable. As an excuse, he told his wife he was going to visit some friends in England, and took leave of her. The first place where he cashed orders was Liverpool ; thence he went to Manchester and Salford, where he was successful in getting more orders cashed. He then proceeded to Leeds, and was again fortunate. From there he journeyed to York and Durham, with the same result. Of course he never returned to Ireland.

The "hue and cry" arose ; the post-offices throughout the kingdom were communicated with, but the money had been drawn in every place except Newcastle-upon-Tyne. The post-office authorities had a warrant taken out for Henry's arrest, and information, with his description, was forwarded to various towns.



A reward was also offered for his apprehension. I found out he had a relative living within my district, and, as a natural consequence, I had close observation kept on the house where this person resided. It so happened that an election for a member of Parliament for Whitby took place.

After the declaration of the poll, I received some information relative to Henry, and sent an officer in pursuit, who returned, having lost all trace of him. I then started myself, fearing we should lose him. We went to Stockton-on-Tees, where the man had friends. Telegrams were sent, and we went on to Newcastle-upon-Tyne. A search was made without success, and we proceeded in turn to South Shields, Whitburn, Jarrow, Tynemouth, and Wellington Quay, where I picked up a trace. Back we travelled to Newcastle, Wallsend, and Felling, and were again off the scent. Again to Newcastle, and after searching all day I found where Henry had lodged on the Thursday night. Not knowing which way he had taken, I went into a private room at the hotel near the station, rang the bell, and called for some refreshments. I had a photo of the absconder with me, and let the waiter see it. "Why," said the waiter, "that person was in here yesterday morning, and wrote a letter!" I thanked him, and he withdrew.

There was a cold fire laid in the room, and whilst sitting there meditating on what should be the next move, I noticed the remnants of a torn-up letter, and at once picked all the pieces from the coal and put them together, and found it came from an address in the Lake district, and ran as follows :—

"MY DEAR HENRY,

"If you have your ring bye you, pledge it, and return here as speedily as possible. We can always redeem the article. It will save time and trouble.

"Yours ever,

The Lake town was now my destination. But it was Saturday afternoon, and there was no train further than Penrith. Calling at the police office at Newcastle, I found a telegram was waiting for me confirming the information I was already possessed of. This "wire" was from one of my inspectors at Whitby. I took train to Penrith and put myself in communication with the police. I engaged a conveyance and drove a distance of eighteen miles, arriving at two o'clock in the morning. At the police station I saw the inspector, who accompanied me to the address in the letter. Knocking at the door, I asked for Mr. C——, the name accused was known by. After I satisfied myself that he was in, I told the people of the house I was his brother, and wished to see him. I followed the girl upstairs, and found my man in bed asleep. I awoke him and took him into custody. He said, "Well, well! it's all nothing. I shall get out of it," and treated the matter with the utmost nonchalance.

Although the prisoner was a married man, he was courting and just on the point of marrying the daughter of the person with whom he lodged. When I apprehended him, the scene was heart-rending; his *fiancée* rushed into the bedroom and went into hysterics. It was some time before I could convince the father and mother of the young man's guilt. On searching him

I found 19s. 3*d*. I took possession of his pocket-book, containing cartes-de-visite, bills, pawn-tickets ; in fact, all belonging to him. He was conveyed to the police station, where he remained until next morning. Then he was taken to Carlisle by the first train, where a telegram was waiting for me from the General Post Office to proceed to Leeds with the prisoner. He was there identified, and he was also recognized at Manchester and Liverpool. Here I handed him to the authorities, and retired from the case.

## CHAPTER XXV.

## THIEVES AND SHARPERS.

Outwitting thieves—Tricks of thieves—"Swell mobsmen"—Long firm frauds—Artful dodgers—A thief robbing a thief—"Buzzing the tenner"—"Sleeving" purses—Watch "hookers" and "snatchers"—"Gunners" and "grasshoppers"—"Snow-droppers"—Shoplifters or "bouncers"—"Silkworms"—"Ready-placers"—"Coshers" and "trippers"—Black-mailers—Swindling advertisers—"Ringing the changes"—Taproom cracksmen—The "puller-up"—Fences—Horse thieves.

TO outwit professional thieves and sharpers is no easy matter, and the police have to resort to various expedients. Some years ago, a rather smart detection was made in a small way by an inspector and sergeant the writer had under his command. A jeweller kept a well-stocked small lock-up shop, with no back room. He worked in a room above the shop. A young woman was employed to attend to customers. She usually went to dinner at 12.30 p.m. and returned at 1.30 p.m. To enable the owner to continue the work upstairs during her absence, a bell that was rung by a spring was attached to the door, which the man quickly answered. It came about that watches, rings, brooches, pins, and other valuables were from time to time missed from the cases. Some suspicion fell upon the young woman engaged in the shop. Quantities of

goods were not taken at one time, but simply an article or two. A process of "weeding" seemed to be going on. The police were consulted, and from observation they felt convinced that the attendant in charge of the shop was innocent.

They made a close examination and found that the tongue of the bell, which hung behind the door, had been silenced by a plug of putty. This circumstance had not been noticed by the young woman, who always placed the bell in position before leaving for dinner. This discovery gave the key to what followed.

There was a small recess under the stairs leading to the upper room, and in the centre of the shop a tin reflector hung over the gas. A hole was bored in the floor above the reflector upstairs, and an inspector, at the dinner hour of the young woman, lay on the floor watching the shop below, whilst a sergeant was hiding in the recess under the stairs. Between the two, for instant communication, was held in one hand by the sergeant a reel of small twine, which passed through his fingers to the officer watching above. This watch was kept for several days before the thief reappeared. About a quarter to one o'clock the expected visitor at length arrived. He quietly pushed open the door, went stealthily round the counter, opened a case, took out two rings, put the case back, and as he was closing the compartment the officer above pulled the string, and the reel turned round in the sergeant's hand. He darted out and secured the prisoner with the property upon him. He was taken before a magistrate and remanded. The thief confessed to all he had taken. Fourteen gold and silver watches, two dozen silver spoons, six breast-pins, twenty-two gold rings, and

## THIEVES AND SHARPERS.

other articles were recovered from pawnshops and other places. The prisoner pleaded guilty before the magistrates and was sentenced to four months' imprisonment.

A word or two may now be said as to *the tricks of thieves*. To the educated class belong "swell mobsmen." Many of these have been in good positions, but, having committed themselves and lost caste, they have by degrees become the companions of flash rogues and have determined that they also, for the future, will live by their wits.

Well dressed, winning in manner, speaking in the language of and with the tone of a gentleman, they find out the names and connections of wealthy young men who are inclined to be "fast," edge themselves into their company, and, being thoroughly conversant with the topics of the day, they make themselves agreeable to and worm themselves into the confidence of their dupes, of whom, at last, they either borrow money or win by fraud, largely at cards, billiards, dice, and so forth. Of course the cards are marked or "packed," and the dice carefully loaded.

There are also long firm swindlers. They and their female helpers locate themselves in distant towns, pass themselves off as gentlefolk—as did Benson and Company—take a house, furnish it, and then go in for a "round robin" or good heavy swindle; or they represent themselves as being engaged in trade, and use "flash" bill-heads, on which they write orders to wholesale dealers, and under various pretences they get the goods, but never pay for them. Their place of business is a myth.

Others of the gang are begging-letter writers.

Having possessed themselves of the information they require, they write to noblemen and persons of wealth and position, asking on very plausible representations for pecuniary aid, which they seldom fail to obtain. When a deplorable accident happens, such as a colliery explosion or the capsizing of a lifeboat, members of the "flash boys' gang" immediately seize the opportunity of getting up subscription books, apparently duly authenticated by some well-known personage, who of course knows nothing about the matter. These subscriptions are represented to be in aid of the widows and orphans. Such detestable swindlers have been known to receive from the charitable hundreds of pounds in a day.

Many other fraudulent acts can be recorded. A little lower in the ranks of roguery we come to what is termed the "artful dodger" and common thief. Once an old thief was singing a comic song in a public-house. A person present found his watch gone; an outcry was made, the police were sent for, and no one was allowed to leave. Everybody began to turn out his pockets. A gentleman's coachman found the watch in his coat-pocket; he could not account for its possession. Fortunately the police knew the man who had been singing the comic song to be an old pickpocket, and took him in charge. He was convicted as a rogue and vagabond, for we could not prove the actual theft. He afterwards admitted that when the outcry was raised, and in the confusion, he slipped the watch into the coachman's pocket. The coachman was known to be as honest as the day is light. What would have become of him had the thief not been known?

There are rogues amongst rogues. A number of thieves were playing and betting at cards together. Several pounds were on the table and two sovereigns were missing; instantly the real thief pointed out the fact, and held up both hands and said, "Now then, fair dues; let everybody be searched, I have no money about me." There was no search, but the man who called out had got the money, for a police officer found the sovereigns in his boots. No one appeared to prosecute.

A trick was practised some years ago, and successfully for a time, called "buzzing the tenner." A person went into a shop and made a small purchase, and whilst doing so, stuck under the edge of the counter a piece of softened shoemaker's wax. Immediately afterwards a confederate entered and asked for change for a ten-pound Bank of England note. The gold was placed on the counter, and the thief quickly palmed a sovereign and instantly stuck it to the wax placed by his companion. If a wrangle took place, the man would say, "I have not a farthing about me. I'll wait until you send for a policeman and be searched." He always came away with the full amount of change, or the bank-note was given back to him. His companion would go immediately afterwards and abstract the sovereign from the wax.

These cunning thieves were both "done" at the finish. A little girl selling firewood was standing at a shop door one day, when an altercation took place between the "buzzer" and a shopkeeper. The police having been sent for, I went and searched the man from top to toe. Nothing was found, and he was very indignant. Of course he was released. The girl



followed to the police office, and said, "I want to tell you something. I saw that man you brought in put something under the edge of the counter." I went back to the shop and found the sovereign. A watch was placed. The confederate came in and purchased some article. As he was leaving the shop he was stopped and searched, when the marked sovereign was found upon him, for we had marked it when first found. His companion was arrested, and both were sent for trial and convicted.

A pickpocket was once caught fairly in the act. He had "sleeved" the purse, and when apprehended he pretended to faint. By some means he managed to drop the purse into the detective officer's breast, under his waistcoat. The officer knew nothing about it until he was washing himself the same evening, when the purse fell on the floor. On another occasion, a woman was charged with stealing a pocket-book containing a number of £5 notes. She was given into the custody of a uniform constable. On the way to the police office, she rolled up her shawl and threw it to her fancy man, saying, "Take that to keep the child warm." It was instantly seized by a plain clothes officer, opened out, and the pocket-book fell from it. The thief was tried and convicted.

Watch-stealers may be either "snatchers" or "hookers." Snatchers, who usually work in gangs of three or four, are the men who make a snatch for the watch and bolt, leaving their confederates to impede a chase. It is a rough and ready method of "prigging," very effectual in crowds.

In the experience of Mr. George Williams, of Liverpool, when that detective was at Salford, a

manufacturer was robbed, near the Manchester Exchange, of a pocket-book containing about £5,000. While the gentleman was standing in the street, a "lady" asked him the way to Cheetham Hill, and as he was replying to her question, she stumbled against him. Thereupon a man came up and protested against his maltreatment of a lady. This was the way in which the "bustle" was worked, and the gentleman, unconscious of his loss, was glad to escape what seemed to be a scandal. Shortly afterwards, however, he discovered the loss of his pocket-book, and he communicated with the police. Ultimately Mr. Williams succeeded in arresting in Glasgow two notorious pickpockets.

The "job" just described approximates to the work of the "hooker," who avails himself of a species of legerdemain. He has accomplices to warn him of the approach of a "'tec." His thefts are usually committed in a church where there is a fashionable crush. If in a theatre, one man gets into conversation with the intended victim, another "covers" him, and the third keeps a "look-out." The hooker, having secured a hold of the watch, detaches it from the chain, termed a "slang," and passes it to his colleague, who hands it on to the third man. It has happened that a detective has placed himself in the nick of time to receive the stolen property, one thief mistaking him for his "pal." A silver watch is called a "white clock," and a gold one, a "red clock."

Common thieves, called amongst the criminal classes "gunners" and "grasshoppers," sneak about watching their opportunities to get up the "dancers"

(stairs), and to "dig themselves away," namely, to hide themselves under the mattress of a disused bed, or in the "cloud" (attic), until all is quiet. Then they go carefully to work in "smelling," *i.e.* examining the rooms whilst the inmates are asleep. If the "Peter" (cash-box) can be found, that is at once appropriated, as also are a man's "strides" (trousers), and anything that can be easily removed. This class of thieves seldom work with tools, and they always go about the house with their "crabs" (boots) off, which articles are generally placed handy in case the owners have to "shunt," that is, escape quickly.

When they have collected their "swag" (booty), the pilferers go downstairs and listen, before "sliding," or unlocking and unbolting doors, to hear if there are any "morks" (police) or any one in the way. If the road is clear, they quietly make their escape.

A robbery was once committed in a large mansion, and for several days the thief was in hiding in the house with his plunder, whilst the police were making all inquiry outside the premises. The thief provided himself with food from the larder until he had an opportunity of getting away. When a robbery of this kind takes place, the police should always search the house from top to bottom, and peer into every nook, niche, and corner, before leaving it, thus satisfying themselves that no one is lurking about the place.

"Snow-droppers" are very cunning thieves. Women, as well as men, look out during the day for the best-loaded "horse to ride on," in the shape of a good washing of clothes hanging out to dry. Good "milling," *i.e.* shirts, stockings, silk "wipes" (pocket-handkerchiefs), etc., are switched off the line, or the

line is cut and all the clothes are bundled into a bag, called a "tat" bag, which the thieves take with them. This description of offence is, as a rule, committed about dusk by persons under the guise of rag-gatherers. The goods are all examined, and marks, if there are any, erased or cut off, and the articles are generally sold at low public or beer houses, or "padding kens." Of course these people are not unfrequently caught. Sometimes, when a good haul is made, the linen is "got up"—ironed, etc.—neatly packed, and sent to other towns for disposal, where the gang has confederates.

Shoplifters, or "bouncers," are of a different class entirely to those just mentioned. There are nearly always two of them—a man and a woman, or two men. If the latter, the one who goes into the "fancy room"—that is, draper's shop—wears a loose "swinger" (jacket) with very convenient "cells," or pockets, inside. Silk pocket-handkerchiefs are often asked for. The unsuspecting shopkeeper naturally produces a box of them. The thief, whilst he is selecting which he means to "prig," asks to be shown some larger ones. If the shopkeeper should begin to take the handkerchiefs away the thief will say, "You can leave these; I want one for my pocket and a larger one for my neck." Whilst the others are brought, several are palmed and passed to the pocket, together with any other goods the thief can get hold of. Before he leaves he makes a purchase or two. He joins his companion outside, to whom he gives what he has stolen.

These tricks are not often practised in large towns, but mostly in country places. When a woman does the "lifting," she spreads her shawl out, and whilst examining goods with her right hand, she is "palming"

away as fast as she can with the left. The thieves select silk handkerchiefs, ribbons, lace, gloves, stockings, and articles of small bulk.

"Silkworms" are well-dressed women who visit jewellers' shops, and, under cover of making a purchase, are shown a good many valuable articles of jewellery ; they spend a small sum and "palm" as many articles as they conveniently can.

"Ready-placers" is the name given to a flash man and woman who have "spotted" a jeweller's shop where young women are employed to attend at the counter. They have a counterfeit of a pair of diamond earrings, or a diamond brooch, which they have seen in the window. They generally make a visit when the gas is lit in the evening, and ask to be shown the article. After examining it, they make some excuse for deferring a purchase, and have in the mean time substituted their worthless facsimile. This is a theft which has often been crowned with success, and is still practised.

"Coshers" and "trippers," or "picking-up molls," are vile men and women who travel from town to town. The women are "put on" to old "swells" who are the worse for drink, or farmers and others who may be in the same condition, and having got them into corners or secluded places, ease them of their money and watches. Should an outcry be made, their "guns," or "bullies," come to their help, and silence the dupes by maltreating them. These offences are frequent in country districts, and at fairs, hirings, and feasts.

Levying blackmail is one of the most abominable forms of crime. Neither probity of character nor

social position secures an innocent person from the possibility of being assailed by slanderous tongues and threatened with exposure. Many persons of cleanly life have been accused of committing most outrageous offences, and when prostrated by the horror of such a charge being brought, they have, in a moment of weak fear, given money to blackmailers to avert publicity. A man, once having suffered himself to be a prey to these villainous scorpions, has no peace in life, always being subject to their attacks. Men and women travel by rail for the sole object of entrapping men of position, especially if they happen to have taken more wine than is good for them. Persons of known low character have received large sums of money before a charge has been brought home to them, when they have at last received well-merited punishment. The police have great difficulty in unveiling these abominations, owing to the unwillingness of the victims to come forward to prosecute, fearing that some one dear to them should be pained by hearing of the charge. Sufficient has been said to place the public on their guard.

A class of vagabonds who deserve unlimited exposure are some advertisers in the daily papers. It is impossible for an advertisement manager to refuse insertion to a properly worded advertisement. There is nothing suspicious in the announcement that a clerk is wanted who can give security, but it is one of the baits which the bogus advertiser often uses to trap the unwary into his net. When he tires of hiring clerks and fleecing them of their small capital, he may turn his attention to advertising that a widow is desirous of selling her piano, or a gentleman going abroad

wishes to get rid of his furniture; or he may have a sewing machine to dispose of, or he may want an assistant in his architect's office. There is no end to the devices he employs, and he tries them all in turn, in the intervals which he spends outside one of Her Majesty's prisons. A little while since a great run upon word puzzles was started. Thus the advertiser promised £1 to the first who solved correctly the letters IPNS. Of course one answer would be SNIP, and another PINS, and neither would be correct, for the one who said "pins" ought to have said "snip," and *vice versa*. This class of advertisement, after one or two exposures in the police courts, was refused admission to the columns of respectable journals in London. Some undoubtedly were genuine, and the subscriptions at, say, a shilling a head were so numerous, that even the rogue who started with the intention of defrauding found that honesty was the best policy, and sometimes paid the prizes he offered.

There are various tricks practised upon licensed victuallers in particular, a favourite one being known as "ringing the changes," the secret of success being the inability of the barmaid to follow the mental arithmetic of the business. Thus a man will ask for change for half a sovereign, and then push his own money and the silver which he has received for it together in a heap, and ask a sovereign for the lot, thus netting 10s. This trick may be complicated further to perplex the inexperienced.

Some other plans may be exposed on the authority of a repentant thief, who says—

"There is another kind of cracksmen who work on common booze cribs, and they 'ready' the job in this

way. They work two-handed (that is, in pairs), and one of them will go into the taproom and the other into the vaults. The latter will call for drink and change a sovereign, in order to find out where the silver is kept, whether in the till or in the cash-box upstairs. Should the barkeeper go upstairs, the 'market' is fixed. Perhaps the accomplice at the bar will have asked the landlord for a sovereign for two half-sovereigns, with a bit of card to enclose in a letter. Meanwhile both men listen for the footsteps overhead, to guide them as to the place where the cash-box is secreted. Such cracksmen carry fine wedges and a large gimlet, with two or three nails. Having obtained entrance to the room, the thief secures the door against intruders, whilst his pal will be waiting outside for the booty, or else, in his capacity of 'puller up,' be entertaining the landlord and company with a joke, the better to engage their attention whilst his confederate clears off. Afterwards they will both meet at an arranged rendezvous, and divide the spoil.

"Another grade of cracksmen victimize pawn-brokers, and they have frequent dealings with 'fences.' In order to 'ready' these places, they watch the shops at closing time, to learn if the swag is placed in the 'Peter,' or safe. The most difficult point to determine is the kind of safe. The gang is a four-handed one. There are two 'pullers-up,' or sentinels, and two at work. If they smell a job, they 'fly a kite;' that is, send a letter to the fence, who will 'fly a stiff' in reply, quoting a price for the 'pewter,' or plate. In this way the thieves get the swag off their hands immediately. The fence will arrange to meet them and take the stuff, which is passed off as luggage. It is



conveyed to the fence's 'lug' and melted down, so as to destroy any clue to the ownership of the property."

From the experience of Mr. Williams, of Liverpool, we may relate how a horse-stealing case was detected. Horse-stealers are not uncommon even in the suburbs of London. One day Mr. Williams was standing in the street in conversation with Andy McMann, famous as the rider of the champion trotter "Steel Grey." In those days the detective was interested in fast horses, and Andy, hearing a horse coming along the road in the distance, observed, "I say, Williams, this sounds like a trotter." At this moment a gentleman came up driving a bay cob in a gig; and the officer thereupon followed him, on hearing Andy remark, "I'm sure I trained that cob by the way he holds his head." The gentleman stopped at an hotel close by, and Mr. Williams spoke to him, asking him the history of the cob. He stated that, as manager for a colliery firm, he bought it for pit work, but finding it a bit too big thought he would try it in his trap. Andy then said, "Get me a sponge and I'll show you, when his coat is wet, that if it's the horse I mean he has a scratch on his off rump that he got from a nail when running into the stable;" and this was found to be true on test. "Now put him in harness and allow me to drive him," continued Andy. This was done, Andy taking the reins; and as he was equal to Mexican Joe as a horse-trainer, the cob at once responded to the habits it had been taught by Andy, its former trainer, when he purchased it from the owner of "Steel Grey" and sold it to Mr. Batchelor, of Birmingham, thus proving the identity conclusively. The gentleman, thus convinced, handed the cob to Mr.

Williams, who set to work to solve the mystery, and subsequently apprehended the man who sold it to the gentleman mentioned. This led to the recovery of about forty stolen horses, and at the trial at Worcester Sessions the then Recorder Amphlett, afterwards Baron Amphlett, gave Mr. Williams the thanks of the county and a special reward.

## CHAPTER XXVI.

## CONVICT SUPERVISION.

Transportation—Tickets of leave—Garroting—Change of system—Convict supervision—The office at Scotland Yard—Prisoners' aid societies—Methods explained—Verifying descriptions—"For failing to report"—Habitual criminals' register—The portrait albums—Photographed against his will—License-holders—Prisoners' property—A strange collection.

IN 1837, owing to the determined opposition of the Australian and colonial authorities, "transportation beyond the seas" was partly abolished. Ten years later, it ceased altogether. Since that time our criminal population, or, at any rate, that portion of it under sentence of imprisonment, has been maintained at the expense of the State at home.

Prior to 1863, the expediency of granting "tickets of leave," or remissions without restrictions, was called into question, a vast increase of crime having taken place in the kingdom, and especially in London. In London, the garroting epidemic was ascribed to the ticket-of-leave system. "It was probably," says Sir E. F. Du Cane, Surveyor-General of Prisons, "with some reason attributed to the discharge within a short period of a flood of criminals who had been penned up during the change of system." A Royal Commission

was appointed, and in 1864 an Act to substitute a conditional license was passed, under which convicts are still liberated, although it has been by subsequent legislation considerably strengthened. It was in 1871 that the Prevention of Crimes Act was substituted for the Habitual Criminals Act of 1869, which was found to be inoperative. This Act of 1871 gives great power to the police to apprehend license-holders, and, in addition, deals with those persons who have been twice convicted of a crime. Another royal commission, which submitted a report in 1879, however, pointed out defects in the then existing law, and upon its recommendation the Convict Supervision Department was appointed on its present basis in 1880.

As explained by the royal commissioners, the necessity for the establishment was principally based upon evidence of numerous complaints made by habitual criminals and persons who had been convicted, of being persecuted, blackmailed, and hunted down by the police, and prevented from earning an honest livelihood.

Pending the provision of central police offices upon the Thames Embankment, the Convict Office occupies inconvenient premises in Scotland Yard. A private dwelling-house is scarcely adapted for the purposes of a bureau, where a large amount of business has to be transacted by the staff of the chief inspector. Every year 1600 men have monthly to "report" themselves personally; upwards of 7,300 letters are received, and nearly 12,000 sent. The clerical work is, therefore, by no means insignificant.

The two principal objects of police supervision are, firstly, the reformation of old offenders, and, secondly,

the prosecution and punishment of habitual criminals, who wilfully and persistently break the law. In the first connection, the Convict Office works in co-operation with a number of prisoners' aid societies, whose aim is to obtain employment for discharged convicts, and which are subsidized by the Government to the extent of £10,000 per annum. One of these organizations has a home where deserving men are temporarily lodged and fed whilst their capabilities are tested in basket and mat making, shoe-making, chair-mending, wood-cutting, tailoring, painting, plumbing, and other kinds of labour.

Supervision applies not merely to convicts who are allowed their freedom, upon conditions, before the expiration of their full time, but to men and women who have been sentenced to terms of imprisonment (instead of penal servitude) with a period of supervision to follow.

Supervision is said to have had remarkable deterrent effects. It is no longer a dead letter. The system has exercised a wholesome influence upon many clever thieves who ostensibly lived in London, but used to make frequent excursions into country districts to commit crime. The risk of recognition is now too great. Police officers have little or no difficulty in discovering the haunts of suspected men, and, furthermore, they are enabled to pick out new recruits, and by a helping hand prevent these first offenders from falling into the ranks of habitual criminals. Travelling thieves and burglars, it is said, dread supervision more than actual imprisonment. It must, however, be stated that for the well-disposed it has no drawbacks. Upon the authority of such

experts as Mr. Justice Field, the Rev. J. W. Horsley, Chaplain of Clerkenwell Prison, Captain Talbot Harvey, Governor of Wormwood Scrubbs Convict Prison, Sir H. Holland, a royal commissioner, and the Committee of the Royal Society for the Assistance of Discharged Prisoners, it is declared that there is no foundation for the complaint that the police are in the habit of hunting down or harassing ex-convicts, but, on the contrary, give them every assistance to reform and start afresh.

What, then, is the method adopted? Mr. James Monro, when Assistant-Commissioner of Metropolitan Police, thus explained it, with particular reference to the second object of supervision, the prosecution of offences.

All prisoners sentenced to penal servitude serve their first nine months on the solitary confinement system, after which they are drafted to various prisons and employed on public works, where, if their conduct is exemplary, their remission is reckoned at the rate of 25 per cent. on the whole of their sentence, less the first nine months. There is no such thing as penal servitude for life. It is construed to mean 20 years, and as this is subject, after the first nine months, to 25 per cent. remission, the period actually served would be 15 years 9 months. A man may be sentenced to a definite term, and not come off so well. Seven days prior to his discharge, notice of the fact, together with a full description and photograph of the convict, is transmitted in triplicate by the governor of the prison in which he is confined, to the Convict Office, with a blank certificated form and one loose photograph. On the Wednesday previous to the

prisoner's liberation, the officers of this department attend Millbank Prison (to which many prisoners are brought for their discharge) and inspect each convict separately, read the particulars of the conviction to him, and check his description for the purpose of verification.

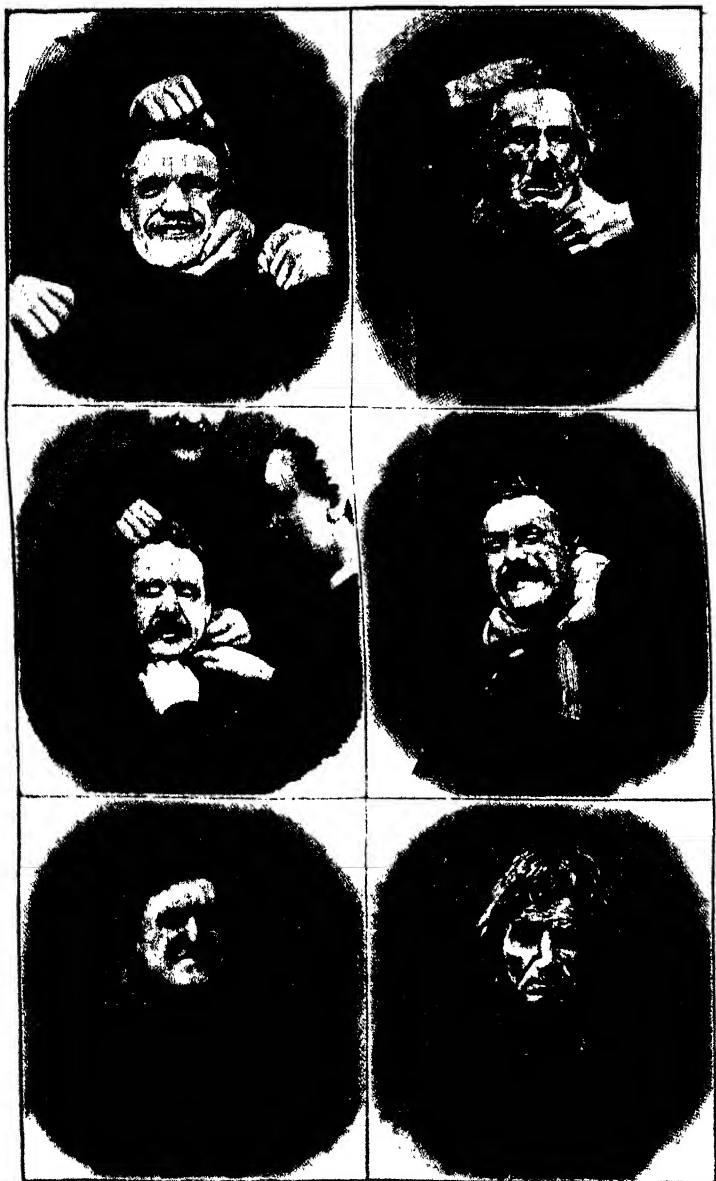
Every prisoner is served with a form directing him where to report on discharge. Women are exempted from reporting monthly, but have to notify change of address. The blank certificate forwarded to the Convict Office by the governor of the prison is returned to him when the man to whom it applies has complied with the law by duly reporting himself within forty-eight hours of his liberation. Upon the receipt of this voucher, the governor informs the Convict Office of the amount due to the discharged prisoner as gratuity, such gratuity, which rarely exceeds £3, having been earned by him during incarceration, according to conduct and work done. The gratuity is payable in instalments by the police, the first, £1 10s., without delay.

Whilst on license, the convict continues to report personally, and occasionally by letter, monthly, each change of address, and his removal to or from any police district, until the expiration of his sentence.

There is a good deal of minor departmental work in recording the movements of the man which it is not necessary to detail, except to say that it includes the weekly distribution of a "convict list," which enables the local police to maintain a complete surveillance, and to keep the central office and several borough and country forces posted up. For convenience of reference, each "supervisee" (as the modern ticket-of-leave man is called) is given an office number.







PRISONERS BEING PHOTOGRAPHED FOR "THE ROGUES' GALLERY."

Somewhere at the top of the Home Office, in long dark and dusty corridors, there are kept the habitual criminals' registers; but they are seldom visited by the police, who find the information they desire readier to hand in the less voluminous records of the Convict Office. These records are contained in albums, and they comprise a collection of upwards of 38,000 photographs of criminals, taken at the time of their discharge. They date back to 1862, some eighteen years earlier than the formation of the department, but it is only since then that they have been so accessible. Each album, properly classified, contains 6,000, and, for the purposes of speedy reference, duplicates are pasted in smaller volumes of 500 portraits each, and these give also the written particulars of each case, and the bodily peculiarities and "marks" as ascertained by the processes already described. Photographs are printed for circulation amongst all police forces of the United Kingdom.

A student of character may direct profitable study to the photographs. They represent the criminals in their ordinary dress, with the face in half profile, so that the shape of the nose may appear. The police also pay particular attention to the person's hands, as betraying character and individuality. Consequently, the convicts are required to hold their hands up, and it is amusing to observe how, in some cases, men have been at the pains to disregard this injunction by hiding as much of their fists as possible in their cuffs, or by other expedients. Generally this is done to conceal a malformation, or the fact that a finger is missing.

Before the days of instantaneous photography it was frequently difficult to obtain a good likeness, for

the unwilling criminal would, at the critical moment, violently distort his features in the hope of defying future recognition. He would, occasionally, struggle fiercely with his gaolers, who, by the exercise of sheer muscular strength, would overpower him. The Rogues' Gallery, which provides us with our illustration, is a terror to the evil doer. At Scotland Yard, the collection of photographs is becoming so large that perhaps the French plan of classifying the heads into types will have to be adopted, for the purpose of facilitating ready reference.

One may often see detectives poring over the "black books" with a view to the identification of suspected persons, or re-convicted criminals. A person twice convicted of crime is liable to be placed under supervision for seven years, in addition to his sentence.

The addresses given by license-holders and supervisees are verified by the visiting officers, who call at the men's homes, or at their workshops. Care is taken to preserve secrecy, or, at all events, to avoid publicity, and a man disposed to do well is not interfered with. But a breach of the conditions of his license renders the holder open to prosecution, and on conviction to three months' imprisonment, in addition to the revoking of the license. A supervisee may also be charged with getting his living dishonestly, or with withholding or giving a false name and address, or with intent to break the law, or with being found under suspicious circumstances in buildings, yards, gardens, orchards, etc. Should a license-holder or supervisee fail to comply with the law, his description is circulated amongst the police, all the constabulary forces of the kingdom co-operating with a view to his apprehension.

There remains to be mentioned an extraordinary feature of the Convict Office. What becomes of all the property, "portable" or otherwise, taken from prisoners at the time of their committal? Most of it is of a trivial character, but some of it is valuable. Since 1869 it has not been forfeited to the Crown in the same way that the pence of a pauper are forfeited to the common treasury of a workhouse. Every article has to be restored to its rightful owner, and it may happen that, even after an interval of a long term of years, the rightful owner has a memory so retentive as to place a purely fictitious value upon his chattels, should any portion of them be missing or damaged. It is a strange collection of miscellaneous wares, a musty mass of odds and ends, which is stored in the cellars and garrets of the Convict Office in Scotland Yard. But every pocket-knife, bonnet-box, packing-case, or whatever it may be, has to be duly docketed, so that it may be produced when wanted. The dust of years falls upon these relics, and gives a black coating to the contents of the bins in which they are kept; they are mute witnesses that their owners are yet living, though dead to the world. Periodically all the unclaimed goods are sold, but there is always a large stock on hand, and amongst it may be noted many articles which have been produced in evidence in the course of celebrated trials.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

## CONCLUSION.

Black sheep—Police and public—Charges of perjury—The constable's evidence—Preventing crime—Rewards—Injuries—Diseases—Convalescent Fund—Medal—Police Orphanage—Bands—Festivals—Pensioners' Corps—Faithful service.

**I**N this closing chapter we may briefly touch upon one or two points which have been passed over. We do not pretend that we have exhausted the secrets of the police. That would have been impossible within the limits of a single volume ; but we have endeavoured to enumerate the peculiar difficulties which attach to their duties and the care which has to be observed in order not to offend the tender susceptibilities of the British subject, whose love of freedom is a national legacy, and one to be handed down to future generations unimpaired.

Whenever a police constable is caught tripping, there is a disposition to visit upon him the sins of his brethren. Taking the metropolitan force of 14,000 men, it would be strange if there were not some black sheep, or some who have given way to temptation. To young fellows fresh from the country, with all the vices of the metropolis to lead them astray, the

huge city has great dangers ; and there is some excuse if they succumb to them. Accordingly, we see in the papers the heading, "The Police and the Public," where accounts are given of assaults and so forth ; but the majority of summonses taken out against the police are dismissed by the police magistrates. In cases in which the complainant has proved the assault, the offending police constable is punished by imprisonment with hard labour ; but during 1887 there was only one such conviction upon record.

The troubles in Trafalgar Square occasioned a great amount of friction. It will be recollected that one man, who was alleged to have died of injuries then sustained, was buried in a coffin, the name-plate of which bore the inscription, "Murdered by the police." In other cases, where charges were brought at Bow Street for assaults at the police station, the complainants offered no evidence in support of them, and they were ordered to pay the costs of ten guineas each. Another fruitless allegation referred to a sergeant whose number had been taken, but who was proved to have been absent from the country at the time of the assault. In the Endacott case, the constable accused of perjury was acquitted. Of the total cost of the defence, £715, £150 was paid out of the Metropolitan Police Fund. Few cases get as far as indictment at the Central Criminal Court, and there, if the bills are not ignored by the grand jury, verdicts of acquittal are usually recorded.

There is nothing which the police constable should be so careful to guard against as the suspicion of having perjured himself. The public are prone to believe that the *esprit de corps* in the force is accountable for

the difficulty of obtaining the conviction of an offending policeman, when the word of independent witnesses can be met by the oath of the defendant's colleagues. The conscientious officer does not try to ensure a conviction by emphasizing the guilt of the accused, but gives him the full benefit of anything that can be advanced in his favour, as well as stating whatever goes to prove him truly guilty. When solicitors are employed on behalf of a prisoner or defendant, and in opposition to the police, they endeavour to oppose and baffle the evidence against their clients. The truthful, calm, steadfast answers of the conscientious policeman will prevent any defeat of justice by this means. One sure sign of the veracity of a policeman is the way in which he is regarded by the majority of persons against whom he has given evidence and whose punishment he has ensured. Feeling that they have been fairly treated by him, they bear him no active malice, but meet him in a manner indicative of the respect his upright conduct in their case has compelled them to entertain.

On the other hand, what must be the feeling in the mind of the unjustly punished man when, on his release, he comes face to face with the constable who has, either wilfully or mistakenly, made an untruthful and damaging statement against him ? Cases can be cited in which a perfectly innocent and unoffending man has been accused and convicted of a serious crime, the thought of which had never even entered his mind. Overwhelmed by the weight of seemingly unanswerable evidence, he is committed to a fate from which his whole being revolts, and if at length, before the expiration of his term of punishment, the truth is made





In addition, there are other and what may be termed the ordinary contingencies. With so much continued exposure to all sorts of weather, it is not surprising that diseases of the lungs are common causes of death, and that rheumatism, gout, and sciatica are reasons for invaliding. Sore feet are not unknown. The winter quarters ending December and March are most productive of illness.

In recognition of their services in connection with the Jubilee, a medal was issued to the police, to be worn on special occasions. At about the same time the public generally of London raised a Police Convalescent Fund, of which, at a joint meeting of the West End and Mansion House Committees, it was resolved "that the funds be handed over in trust to Colonel Sir C. Warren and Colonel Sir J. Fraser, and their successors, as commissioners of the Metropolitan and City Police, and the income applied for convalescent purposes for the injured and sick members of the two police forces as occasion may require, and at the discretion of the trustees." It was further resolved, "That the trustees should report annually to the Lord Mayor for the time being as to the distribution of the money during the year."

The commemoration of the Jubilee was not forgotten in the country at large.

Every year, usually at the Crystal Palace, there is a grand *fête* for the benefit of the Metropolitan and City Police Orphanage, Wellesley House, Twickenham. This institution was established by Colonel Sir E. Henderson, K.C.B., then Commissioner of Police, on January 1, 1870, to afford relief to as many destitute orphans of members of the Metropolitan and City

At the Metropolitan Police Fête there is generally a show of some of the police bands, of which most of the metropolitan divisions have one, composed of all ranks, and instructed by a competent bandmaster. The instruments are reed and brass, but that of the G division is brass simply. The divisional band is expected to play at the annual *fête*, cricket match, and at funerals. Expenses are defrayed by voluntary subscriptions, and there are two practice nights per week. Latterly the police bands have had permission to play on summer evenings in open spaces. They are now and then engaged to play at garden parties, *fêtes*, school treats, bazaars, etc. The band of the City of London Police is peculiarly favoured. The men wear a natty uniform, with gold lace shoulder-knots, and caps bearing the civic arms, unlike the Metropolitan Police, who merely substitute a kepi for the helmet. The City Police band do not ask for subscriptions to supplement those of the members, but they are allowed to take engagements at some distance from London, as far as Luton in Bedfordshire, for which they get paid—not extravagantly, but liberally



festival has become so popular that upwards of 1,000 tickets were issued in December, 1888, the sale of tickets having to be really limited to this number, the rooms at the Cannon Street Hotel being engaged for one night only. Subscriptions from Mr. Alfred de Rothschild and Dr. Freshfield enabled the organizing committee to issue the tickets on the terms already stated. It may be mentioned, too, that Mr. Alfred de Rothschild also makes a present at Christmas of half a pound of tobacco, a pipe, and pouch to each member of the force, numbering nearly 900, and gives a packet of beautiful toys to City policemen's children between three and thirteen years of age, numbering upwards of 1,000.

What is done in London is done also in the country, and many pleasant gatherings might be described, whereat the chairman of the Watch Committee has entertained the members of the borough force, or when advantage has been taken of some important occasion to express the indebtedness of the inhabitants towards the police. These marks of encouragement are valued by the police, and the remembrance of them accompanies the constable on his beat as, in the silence of the night, in fog, frost, or snow, hail, rain, or mist, he plods his appointed round, with a keen eye to detect the disturbance of his "marks," and with a resolute heart to apprehend the ill-doer that he hopes to discover. The tributes of public appreciation are treasured by him, when, from length of service or failing health, he applies for a pension; or if retirement should be his lot, when, in possession of his full strength, he seeks to obtain employment in other fields

of industry. And in this connection we are glad that Colonel Howard Vincent is successful in carrying into effect his scheme for the formation of a Police Pensioners' Corps on similar lines to that of the commissionaires of London, a body which is so highly popular.

Finally, let us reiterate our earnest desire that the contents of this volume, compiled as they have been without ulterior motive, will assist to rivet the bonds of confidence between the public and the police. Our object has been to set forth how much of self-sacrifice, forethought, perseverance, and watchfulness is daily and hourly exercised by the duty-regarding constable, in order that the inhabitants may dwell in security and sleep undisturbed by the midnight marauder. We hope that by the perusal of the narrative of what has been accomplished by individual officers, members of our police forces will be stimulated to perform their work, and at the end of their career they may retire into private life with the full assurance that they have earned and gained the respect and appreciation of the public whom they have striven faithfully to serve.

# INDEX.

## A

Abraham man, 8  
 Academy of thieves, 7  
 Accidents in the streets, 248  
 Advertisement frauds, 349, 350  
 Ambulance, 99, 300  
 Anderson, Dr., 133  
 Anecdotes, of Townsend, 49, 50, 51 ;  
     Sayer, 52 ; reporting his super-  
     intendent, 148 ; a queer chief  
     constable, 150, 151 ; cheating the  
     doctor, 153 ; arrest for burglary,  
     154, 155 ; struggle with a con-  
     vict, 155 ; Tom Sayers, 156, 157 ;  
     John Leech, 157 ; an affecting  
     incident, 158 ; an extra-judicial  
     separation, 159, 160 ; Wolf Holds,  
     161 ; swearing a witness, 162 ;  
     one touch of nature, 165 ; a suc-  
     cessful ruse, 184 ; prize-fighter  
     protects police, 226 ; arrest in a  
     lodging-house, 238 ; cheating the  
     coroner, 288-290 ; stories about  
     "information received," 291-294 ;  
     captures of a receiver, 318, 319 ;  
     how forgers were captured, 326-  
     334 ; a post-office forger, 334-  
     338 ; how the jeweller was robbed  
     and the thief caught, 339, 340 ;  
     detecting a smart thief, 342 ; a  
     thief robbing a thief, 343 ; "buz-  
     zing the teuner" once too often,  
     344 ; working the bustle, 345 ;  
     catching a horse-stealer, 352,  
     353

Annual report, first (1870', 80  
 Apollo gardens, 13  
 Army reserve men, 92, 94  
 Assize of Arms, 1

## B

Backing warrants, 303  
 Ballantine, Serjeant, his experiences  
     of the Thames Police, 129  
 Ballot, 185  
 Bands, police, 367  
 Barnard, 9  
 Bartholomew Fair, 106  
 Basket justices, 34  
 Beadle roll, 24  
 Beak, 161  
 Bear-bait, 37  
 Beats, 64 ; length of, 87 ; how  
     worked, 87  
 Begging-letter writers, 341  
 Bellman, ancient, 21  
 Betting rings, 220  
 Bird fair, 254  
 Birnie, Sir Richard, 32  
 Blackmail, 348, 349  
 Black sheep, 362  
 Blackstrap, 122  
 Blood-feast, 11  
 Blood-money, 40  
 Bloody Sunday, 213  
 Blucher cabmen, 249  
 Blue devils, 70  
 Boat-races, 125  
 Bobbies, 63  
 Bogus clubs, 211

- Bouncers, 347  
 Bow Street, 34, 42; runners, 40; patrol, 45, 47, 77; Clarke, the runner, 325  
 Bradlaugh, Charles, 198  
 Brown Bear, 52  
 Bruce, Mr., 133  
 Bull-baiting, 13  
 Bumboats, 119  
 Burglars, armed, 305-311; curious detection of, 311; where they hide tools, 312; slang, 315, 316  
 Burglars' tools, 316; Peace, 268; Wright and Wheatley, 268; stock-in-trade, 268; in the Black Museum, 269  
 Burglary, 154, 305; safe, 312; Muswell Hill, 311; Mr. Vincent's views, 312, 313; Sir C. Warren's action, 313; Mr. Monro's recommendations, 314; how "put up," 314, 316, 317  
 Buzzing the tenner, 343, 344  
  
 Cabmen, idiosyncrasies of, 252; mish, 252; lost property restored by, 253  
 Cabs, crawlers, Bluchers, 249; licensing of, 250, 251; inspection of, 251; drivers of, 251; loitering of, 252; plates for, 252  
 Cadgers, 241  
 Candidates' class, 83  
 Candidates' Section House, 88; calls upon, 89; conditions of entry, 89; medical examination, 89; course of training, 90; pay, 90; board, 90; mess, 91; candidates, where drawn from, 91; canteen, 92; drill, 93; dormitories, 95; posted to divisions, 96  
 Capital punishment, 18  
 Card-sharpping, 221, 269  
 Cato Street Conspiracy, 55  
 Cattle-driving, 255  
 Cells, 97, 98, 160  
 Circumstantial evidence, 290  
 City, night watch (1263), 2; Charles I., 7; officers, 36; police, 62, 104; Watch Act (1829), 105; ward constables, 105; Court of Aldermen, 105; day and night patrol, 105; pay and uniform of patrol, 105; marshals, 105; marshalsmen, 106; police orders (1836), 106; Police Act (1839), 106; divisions and watch-houses, 107; reserve, 107; Central Criminal Court, 107, 115; jurisdiction, 107; purse, 107; proposal of amalgamation with the Metropolitan Police by Sir G. Grey, 108; vindication by Mr. B. Scott, 108; crime, 108; pay of police, 108; staff, 109; station-houses, 109; quarters for married men, 110; station sergeants, 110; inspectors, 111; uniform of police, 111; detectives, 112, 113; pay, 114; pension, 114; cost of police, 114; beats, 115; street duty, 115; costers and costermongers, 116; Summons Court, 116; festivities, 117; bridges, 116; police and the Socialists, 204, 207, 208; police festival, 369  
 Charlies, 21  
 Cheapside hawkers, 116  
 Childers' committee, 81  
 "Chronicles of the Mayors and Sheriffs," 2  
 Clan-na-Gael, 178  
 Clerkenwell explosion, 186  
 Clerkenwell watch-house, 64  
 Clippers of coin, 40  
 Cock Lane, 14  
 Cockpit, 13  
 Coldbath Fields (1833), 77  
 Colquhoun, 26; on highwaymen 17; on Thames police, 121

- Commissioners, defence, 77; appointed (1839), 131; assistant appointed (1884), 131
- Common lodging-houses, 235; supervision of, 237; frequenters of the, 235-241; children in, 239; metropolitan, 243; Whitechapel and Westminster, 243-245; deputy, 245; Scotland Yard department, 246
- Compensation for damages, 201
- Composition of new police, 72
- Conant, Sir Nathaniel, 44
- Coney-catching, 8
- Constable, 68
- Constables, parish, exemptions, 3; penalties, 24; ship, 120; chief, as advocates, 286
- Constables' quarters, 99, 100
- Constitution keeper, 236
- Convalescent Fund, 366
- Convict list, 358
- Convict office, 267, 355
- Convict, struggle with, 155
- Convict supervision, 354, 355; deterrent effects of, 356; methods adopted, 357, 358
- Coppers, 63
- Coroner, cheating the, 288-290
- Coroner's inquests, 277; court, 286
- Coshers, 348
- Cost of Metropolitan Police, 101
- Costermongers, 116; barrows, 254
- Counterfeit crank, 8
- Counterfeiters, 269, 292
- Courts lect, 3
- Cozeners, 8
- Cracksmen, 314, 315
- Crawling cabs, 249
- Creation of new districts, 82, 83
- Cresset, Tower of London, 5
- Crime on the Thames, 124
- Criminal investigation, early history, 259; Dickens's description of, 259; department and its officers, 260; local inspectors, 261; director of, 262; qualifications of detectives, 263, 266; training of detectives, 264; Sir Charles Warren upon, 265, 266; Black Museum, 267; of murderers (*see* Murders), 272
- Criminal registers, 45
- Cross, Sir R. A., 130
- Crushers, 63
- Crying the hour 28 68
- Cursitor, 8
- Cutlasses, 163
- Cutpurse and the citizen, 9
- D
- Daily Telegraph* and police, 279, 280, 301
- Dancers, 260
- Defoe's description of watchmen, 25
- Deputy of common lodging-house, 245
- Detective Department, 133
- Detectives (*see* also Criminal Investigation), trial of, 261; qualifications and training of, 263, 264; police experience essential, 265; known by their boots, 266; no mystery about them, 267; Black Museum, 267; their investigation of murders (*see* Murders), 272; a novel device of, 294
- Dick Turpin and the lady, 16
- Dickens, Charles, and the detectives, 48
- Diseases, 366
- Dishonest tradesmen, 257
- Dismounted horse patrol, 45
- Disposition of Metropolitan Police, 86
- District, Metropolitan Police, extent of, 84
- Divisional clerks, 86
- Divisions of Metropolitan Police District, 64, 84



- Dockyard police, Woolwich, 125 ;  
 Portsmouth, police fire brigade,  
 125 ; Devonport, 125 ; Chatham,  
 125 ; Pembroke, 125 ; Chatten-  
 den Powder Magazine, 126
- Dog and Duck, 13
- Dogberry, 22
- Dog handicaps, how started, 224
- Dogs, 254 ; destruction of, 255
- Donaldson, Bow Street runner, 54
- Doss houses, 243
- Dress of Charlies, 28 ; of police  
 (1829), 66
- Drill, 93
- Drowned, 158
- Drunkenness in 1744, 12
- Dry-land Jacks, 237
- Ducking stool, 19
- Duke of Wellington, 62
- Dummerers, 8
- Duties of magistrates, 34
- Dynamite panic, 80 ; Local Govern-  
 ment Board (1883), 186 ; *Times*  
 office (1883), 187 ; Glasgow  
 (1883), 187 ; nitro-glycerine fac-  
 tory discovered at Birmingham,  
 (1883), 187, 188 ; trial of con-  
 spirators, 188 ; Metropolitan Dis-  
 trict Railway (1883), 188 ; Vic-  
 toria (1884), 189 ; the clock  
 pistol, 189 ; attempted outrages  
 at railway stations, 190 ; rewards,  
 190 ; piecing evidence, 191  
 Scotland Yard (1884), 192 ; Nel-  
 son Column attempt, 192 ; Lon-  
 don Bridge (1884), 193 ; Metro-  
 politan Railway (1885), 193 ;  
 Westminster Hall (1885), 194 ;  
 House of Commons (1885), 194,  
 195 ; Tower of London (1885),  
 195, 196 ; arrest of Cunning-  
 ham, 196 ; rewards, 270
- Endacott, defence of, 363
- Evidence, how to give, 364
- Explosions (*see also* Dynamite),  
 186 ; Windsor, 170, 171
- Festivities, 367-369
- Fête, Metropolitan Police, 367
- Field Lane, 14
- Fielding, Henry, 42
- Fielding, Sir John, 42, 43
- Fire, 229 ; Metropolitan brigade,  
 230 ; provincial brigades, 230 ;  
 duties of a constable, 230, 231 ;  
 duties of the detective, 231 ;  
 heroism of police at a, 231 ; the  
 escape, 232 ; courageous rescue,  
 232, 233 ; the use of sand, 233,  
 234
- Fixed points established (1870), 80,  
 86
- Flash boys' gang, 342
- Flash houses, 52, 237
- Fleetwood, 7
- Flying a kite, 320
- Flying a stiff, 351
- Ford, Sir Richard, 44
- Forest of Hardwick, 18
- Forester, the brothers, 113
- Forgers, 324 ; Vaughan, first forger,  
 324 ; Matthison, 325 ; Old Patch,  
 325, 326 ; in 1810, number of,  
 326 ; Fauntleroy, 326 ; Maynard  
 executed, 326 ; how detected,  
 326-338
- Found drowned, 125
- Foyster, 7
- Frog's march, 76, 206
- G
- Gahagan, 10
- Game revenue officers, 122
- Gammy vendors, 236
- Garreters, 260
- German Embassy plot, 269, 294
- Ear-cropping, 19
- Elections, 183, 185

Gibbet, advantages of the, 57  
 Gibbet Law of Halifax, 18  
 Gratuity funds, 100  
 Greenacre, 284  
 Gresham, Sir Thomas, 5  
 Grey, Sir George, 130  
 Guildhall, 117

## H

Habitual criminals' registers, 359  
 Halberds, 25  
 "Hang out your lanterns," 23  
 Harcourt, Sir William, 80, 81, 130  
     263, 267, 270  
 Hawkers, licensed, 240  
 Hawkubites, 7  
 Hayes, Catherine, 283  
 Heathcote, Sir Gilbert, 11  
 Hectors, 7  
 Height, standard of, raised, 87  
 Henderson, Colonel, appointment  
     of, 79; retirement (1886), 80,  
     201; his suggestions, 88  
 Henry III. and the citizens, 6  
 High treason, punishment, 19  
 Highwaymen, 16  
 Home Office, control of provincial  
     police, 137  
 Home Secretary, control of, 61,  
     128, 131  
 Horse patrols, Bow Street, 44, 77  
 Horse-stealers, 352  
 Hours of duty, 87  
 Housebreaking, 313  
 House of Commons, police arrange-  
     ments, 172; orders of admission,  
     175, 176, 180; suspected visitors,  
     177, 179; new regulations, 181;  
     serving a summons, 182  
*Hue and Cry*, 302  
 Humane Society, Royal, 365  
 Hustings, scenes at, 184  
 Hydrophobia, 254

## I

Identification, mode of, 333

Infant Life Protection Act, 146  
 Information received, 291-294  
 Informations, 298  
 Informers, 293  
 Irish American conspiracy, 112  
 Irish busker, 237  
 Inspector, duties, pay, 68

## J

Jack Sheppard, 16  
 Jack the Ripper, 278  
 Jackson, the burglar, 311  
 Jenny Darbies, 70  
 Jonathan Wild, 9  
 Jubilee of 1887, 169; ball at Guild-  
     hall, 117; the late Emperor  
     Frederick, 170; honours, 366  
 Jubilee plot, 170, 177, 178, 279  
 Judicial nipper, 8

## K

Kennington Lane Section House, 88  
 Keys, the runner, 56

## L

Last watchman, 32  
 Leather Apron, 278  
 Leech, John, 157  
 Legal adviser to  
     Police, 132  
 Libel law, 279  
 License holders, 360  
 Licensing Act (1744), 12, 227, 228  
 Light horsemen, 121  
 Lipski agitation, 129  
 Local Government Act, metro-  
     politan changes due thereto, 135;  
     the counties, 137  
 Lock-up, 69  
 Lodgings for single policemen, 99,  
     100  
 London Bridge explosion, 124  
 London Military Association, 14

Lost children, 165  
 Lost property, 252  
 Lumpers, 119, 121, 123

## M

Macemen, 260  
 Maclean, Roderick, 167  
 McWilliam, Mr., 112  
 Mansion House, banquets, 117  
   explosion (1882), 117; Sociali  
   deputation, 204  
 Marching watch, Henry VIII., 5  
 Marine Police Office (1798), 119  
 Marks, 159  
 Marlborough House, 168  
 Marylebone Gardens (1764), 16  
 Matthews, Mr., on rewards, 269  
 Maxims for the police, 64  
 Mayne, Sir Richard, 63, 74  
 Mess, 99  
 Metropolitan Police, cost of, 101  
 Metropolitan Police Fund, 101  
 Michael Angelo Taylor's Act, 254  
 Middlesex Justices' Act (1792), 36  
 Military and police, 213  
 Mint prosecutions, 136  
 Mitre Square, 112, 196  
 Mobs, 198, 205, 210  
 Mobsmen, swell, 260, 341  
 Mohocks, 7  
 Monkey and wheel, 221, 222  
 Monro, Mr., 102, 103, 260, 279  
 "Morning State," 298  
 Mounted branch, 83  
 Mudlarks, 121  
 Mugs, 220  
 Mull'd Sack, the chimney-sweep, 8  
 Muns, 7  
 Murdered by the police, 363  
 Murders: the death of Boans,  
   police constable, 269; in Phœnix  
   Park, 269; in Whitechapel, 271,  
   273, 277; system of investi-  
   gation of, 273-275; Gates-  
   head, 277; Havant, Bradford,  
   Yeabridge, 278; Lefroy, 280, 281,

285; Currell, 283; Catherine  
 Hayes, 284; Greenacre, 284; of  
 Constable Cole, 306; of Con-  
 stable Atkins, 306; of Thompson  
 (attempted), 287, 288; of In-  
 spector Simmons, 309  
 Mushroom fakers, 241  
 Music and dancing licenses, 227  
 Mutilation, 19

## N

New offices, murder undiscovered,  
   134; description of, 134, 135  
 New Police Bill (1829), 59  
 Newcastle, Duke of, 43  
 Newgate, 20  
 Newspapers and the police, 279-  
   286  
 Nickers, 7  
 Nihilists, 294

## O

Objections to Peel's plan, 62  
 Old Hobson, 23  
 Orders to police (1830), 74; police  
   code of, 102; issue of, 299  
 Orphanage, 366  
 Orrock, 306

## P

Palaces, royal, 168  
 Palming, 347  
 Parish constables (Edward III.), 3  
 Parliamentary police, 172; Warren's  
   order, 173; night watch, sitting  
   watch, 174; dynamite in the  
   House of Commons, 174; issue  
   of orders of admission, 174, 175,  
   180; Inspector Denning, 175,  
   179; Jubilee plot, 177; new re-  
   gulations, 181; service of sum-  
   mons, 182  
 Parochial constables, 36  
 Pawnbrokers' lists, 299

- Pay of Metropolitan Police, 100 ; Provincial policemen, 138 ; candidates for, 139 ; conditions of service, 140 ; preliminary training, 140 ; barracks for, 140, 141 ; schoolmasters for, 141 ; promotion, 142 ; sergeant and his duties, 142 ; the inspector, 143-145 ; superintendent, 145-147 ; one of the old sort, 147 ; inferior education in former times, 148 ; deputy chief constable, 149 ; the Acts of 1839, 1840, 1856, 149 ; chief constables, 149 ; their duties, 150  
 Public carriage department, 250  
 Public prosecutor, 136  
 Public Stores Act, offences against, 126  
 Punch's cartoon, 102  
 Punishments, gambling, scolding, treason, vagabondage, 19
- Q
- Queen, protection of, 166 ; precautions on royal journeys, 167 ; precautions at royal palaces, 168
- Rabbit coursing, 223  
 Race meetings, 219  
 Radical clubs, 210  
 Ranks, 65  
 Readying the job, 314, 315  
 Ready placers, 348  
 Rearrangement of divisions, 84  
 Receiver of police, 135, 136  
 Receivers, 9, (in 1800) 36, 122, 317, 318 ; captures of, 318, 319  
 Recommendations of committee of 1886, 82  
 Refineries of stolen sugar, 122  
 Reliefs, 87  
 Reminiscences of the Duke of Wellington, 62  
 Republic of thieves, 15
- Pay of Metropolitan Police, 100 ;  
 of City Police, 114  
 Peace, 268, 307, 308  
 Pearson, Colonel, 133  
 Peel, Sir Robert, 129  
 Peel's day patrol, 46  
 Peeler, 63  
 Pensioners' corps, 370  
 Pension, rates of, 101  
 Perjury, 363  
 Phoenix Park murders, 269  
 Photographs of criminals, 359, 360  
 Pickpockets, 164, 231, 292, 344  
 Piggeries, 242  
 Pillory abolished (1837), 19  
 Piracy, last execution for (1830), 58  
 Pirate 'buses, 253  
 Pitch and toss, 224  
 Plain clothes police, 78, 261, 262  
 Police Acts (1829, 1839, 1840), 79  
 Police Bill (1792), 33  
 Police cavalry, 206  
 Police courts, established, 34  
 Police, Dr. Johnson's definition, 4 ;  
   office in a country town, 162 ; and  
   press, 279-286 ; and the public,  
   363 ; charges against the, 363 ;  
   commended, 365  
*Police Gazette*, 300, 301  
 Politeness, 249  
 Political police, 183, 261  
 Population of Metropolitan Police  
   District, 85  
 Portico thief, 311  
 Portrait gallery, 163, 164  
 Portraiture, 281, 301, 359  
 Press and police, arrest of Mr.  
   Bennet Burleigh, 209  
 Press Yard, Newgate, 20  
 Prevention of Crimes Act (1871),  
   355  
 Prigger of prances, 8  
 Prisoners' aid societies, 356  
 Prisoners' gratuities, 358  
 Prisoners' property, 361  
 Prize-fight, 223-225  
 Protecting statesmen, 182

Reserve police, 153  
 Rewards, 10, 39, 269  
 Riot Act, 213  
 Riots, Trafalgar Square and Hyde Park, 81, 200; Hyde Park (1887), 206; Trafalgar Square (Bloody Sunday), 210-212  
 Ringing the changes, 350  
 River pillage, 121  
 River police, 77, 119  
 Robin Redbreasts, 48  
 Roger Hovenden, 6  
 Rosebery, Earl of, on the City Police, 115  
 Rowan, Colonel, 63  
*Royalist*, police boat, 123  
 Ruffler, 8  
 Run down, 124  
 Ruthven, the runner, 54  
 Rutter, 8

## S

Saddlery store, 83  
 St. John of Jerusalem, Order of, 365  
 St. Paul's watch-house, 27, 65  
 Salary of watchmen, 26  
 Sale of Tyburn ticket, 41  
 Saluting royalty, 168, 169  
 Sanctimonious bard, 236  
 Sayer, 14, 50-52  
 Sayers, Tom, 156  
 Scale of rewards, 39  
 Scavenging, 255  
 Scenes in a police office, 159, 160  
 Scolds, 19  
 Scotland Yard, established (1829), 61, 82, 127; distinguished residents, 128; explosion at (1884), 192  
 Scottish maiden, 18  
 Sections, 64  
 Sergeant, 68  
 Service, conditions of, 65  
 Sewage pollution of Thames, 124  
 Shadowing, 298  
 Ship constables, 120

Shoeblocks, 255  
 Shoplifters, 347  
 Silkworms, 348  
 Sitting mumpers, 237  
 Sky farmers, 43  
 Slang, burglars', 315, 316; thieves', 320-323  
 Smashers, 269  
 Smoke Nuisances Act, 255  
 Snowdroppers, 346  
 Socialists, Dod Street, 199; Trafalgar Square (1886), 199; Lord Mayor's Day, 201; Hyde Park (1887), 201; free speech, Trafalgar Square, 203; visits to Government offices, 203; Trafalgar Square (1887), 205; Hyde Park, 206, 207; Thames Embankment, 207; Clerkenwell Green, 208; at Westminster Abbey, 208  
 Special constables, 38; Acts of 1831, 1835, 1842, 215; Chartist demonstration, 215; Clerkenwell outrages, 216; oath of, 216; enrolment in 1887, 217; regulations approved by Sir James Ingham, 217; cost of, 217  
 Spies, 78  
 Spinning the table, 221  
 Spitalfields in 1822, 37  
 Statements, 275  
 Stations, 64; report as to condition of, 96  
 Statute of Winchester, 2  
 Stow, 21, 24  
 Strawmarket oath, 28  
 Street-lighting (Charles II.), 7  
 Street robbers (1744), 11  
 Street traffic, 247, 248  
 Strength of force (1870), 80  
 Strike for pay, 80  
 Subdivisional inspector, 85  
 Superannuation charge, 102  
 Superintendent's duties, 67  
 Supervisee, 358, 360  
 Suicides, 365

Surgeon of police, 152  
 Swindlers, long firm, 341  
 Swinging the pan, 241

Taker up, 8  
 Tat bag, 347  
 Telegraphs, 93, 299  
 Telephones, 299  
 Temple of Flora, 13  
 Thames Police, 77, 119; transferred  
 to Arbour Square, 123; *Royalist*,

Theatres, 227  
 Thief-catching, 10  
 Thieves' academy, 7  
 Thieves, dictionary of slang, 320-  
 323; tricks of, 339, 341; no  
 honour amongst, 293, 343; gun-  
 ners and grasshoppers, 345;  
 booze-crib breakers, 350; tricks  
 upon pawnbrokers, 351; two-  
 handed and four-handed gangs,  
 351

Thieves' slang, 345-348  
 Thistlewood, 54  
 Thuttell, 54  
 Tickets of leave, 354  
 Townsend, 14, 16, 19, 40, 48-50,  
 56  
 Trafalgar Square, 199, 201, 202,  
 204, 205, 208, 210-215, 218  
 Tramps, 235  
 Treasury prosecutions, 137, 286  
 Treasury Solicitor, 136  
 Trial, Gallagher, Whitehead, and  
 others, 188; Burton and Cunning-  
 ham, 188  
 Tricks, on watchmen, 29; of trades-  
 men, 258  
 Tyburn, 9; tickets, 40

## U

clubs, 199  
 Unemployed in Trafalgar Square

and Clerkenwell. *See* Socialists  
*and* Trafalgar Square  
 Uniform of City Police, 113  
 Upright man, 8

## V

Vagabond branding, 19  
 Vagrant Act, :  
 Vaughan, 47  
 Vestry opposition, 72; approval, 73  
*Vice*, 219  
 Vickery, the runner, 53  
 Vigilance associations, 38  
 Vincent, Mr. Howard, 262, 263;  
 on the power of the press, 280  
 Volunteer companies, 12

## W

Wanted, persons, 302  
 Wapping Old Stairs, 123, 124  
 Warrants, 302, 303  
 Warren, Sir Charles, 81, 265; his  
 views of drill, 93; his code, 102; on  
 the powers of the commissioner,  
 132; relations between Sir Charles  
 and Mr. Matthews, 132; and Tra-  
 falgar Square, 202; and reporters,  
 204; condemned by Socialists,  
 208; and the press; declined to  
 give additional facilities, 209  
 Watch and ward, 2  
 Watch Committees, 137  
 Watch, marching, 5  
 Watchman, of James I., 24; tricks  
 upon, 29; last, 32  
 Watchman's song, 30  
 Watch-stealers, 344, 345  
 Watch-tax abolished (1829), 62  
 Waterloo Bridge, 123  
 Weights and measures, 256  
 Wellington Barracks, 93  
 West India Dock Road Police Sta-  
 tion, 97  
 Westminster Police, 36

- |                                   |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Whip-jacks, 8                     | Wild, Jonathan, 9                 |
| Whipping, 19                      | Winchester, Statute of, 2         |
| Whistles, 87                      | Windsor, explosion at, 170, 171 ; |
| Whitechapel murders, 243          | strange visitors, 178             |
| Whitehall Place, 127 ; Nos. 4 and | Working a bustle, 345             |
| 5, 133 ; Nos. 21 and 22, 133      | Worship Street Police Office, 34  |

THE END.

Now if you want some volumes nice,  
You'll start at once I'm en-si,  
And go and fetch them in a trice,  
From Messrs. FIELD AND TUEE.—*Punch*.

---

EXTRACTS FROM

## Field & Tuer's List, The + Leadenhall + Press. 50, LEADENHALL STREET, E.C.

---

**POLICE!** By CHARLES TEMPEST CLARKSON, thirty-three years an Officer of Police, and J. HALL RICHARDSON, Journalist on one of the London Dailies. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press E.C. [Six Shillings.]

Whole page illustrations of Prisoners being photographed for "The Rogue's Gallery"; Burglar's Kit and Metropolitan Police Constable.

---

**THE STORY OF "BRADSHAW'S GUIDE."** By PERCY FITZGERALD, M.A., F.S.A. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

---

**A SELECTION OF SKETCHES AND LETTERS ON SPORT AND LIFE IN MOROCCO.** By RICHARD WAKE. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Guinea.]

---

**PRINCE DORUS.** By CHARLES LAMB. A reproduction of the first edition of 1811, including all the beautiful coloured plates. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Five Shillings.]  
*Five hundred copies only printed, each being separately numbered & signed.*

A copy of this scarce and amusing book for children was recently sold by auction for £45.

---

### BABY'S RECORD.

LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

"Baby's Record" is a daintily got-up little book for mothers, in which to jot down particulars of interest concerning baby. Numerous printed headings, with ample supply of ruled lines, are systematically arranged for details of birth, weight, growth, baptism, characteristics, early incidents, religious education, foods, ailments, faults and virtues, amusements, education, school prizes, and general remarks, &c., &c.

"Baby's Record" is naturally of the greatest interest to mothers, and "will prove," says an experienced London Physician who has seen the little book, "an invaluable aid to the doctor in the treatment of ailments in later life."



**PRIZE SPECIMENS OF HANDWRITING, LADIES' AND Men's.** Contains forty specimens, in facsimile, of the best handwriting for which prizes were recently awarded by the publishers of *Tit Bits*. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Sixpence.]

**WEATHER WISDOM FROM JANUARY TO DECEMBER.** Wherein will be found much that is Curious, Entertaining and Instructive. Compiled by WILFRED ALLAN. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [5]

**JOHN BULL JUNIOR: or FRENCH AS SHE IS TRANSLUCED.** Enlarged from "*Drat the Boys!*" By MAX O'RELL, author of "*John Bull and his Island.*" &c. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall [One Shilling.]

**JOHN BULL AND HIS ISLAND.** (Cheap Edition.) Translated from the French by the Author, MAX O'RELL. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

Translated into almost every European language, upwards of two hundred thousand copies of "*John Bull and his Island*" have been disposed of, and this remarkable book is still in

**HAWARA, BIAHMU, AND ARSINOE.** With thirty plates. By W. M. FLINDERS PETRIE, author of "*The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,*" &c. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Sixteen Shillings.]

**A SEASON IN EGYPT.** By W. M. FLINDERS PETRIE. Illustrated. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Twelve Shillings.]

**THE PYRAMIDS AND TEMPLES OF GIZEH.** By W. M. FLINDERS PETRIE. Containing an account of excavations and surveys carried on at Gizeh during 1880-1-2, with the application of the results to various modern theories of the pyramids. (Illustrated.) LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. Cheap and revised edition. [Six Shillings.]

"No one can fail to profit by a study of Mr. Flinders Petrie's exact and luminous account of the Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh."—*Spectator*

**HIEROGLYPHIC BIBLE.** Being a careful and interesting and important passages in the Old and New Testaments. Illustrated with hundreds of Engravings on Wood. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

A facsimile, crowded with the original quaint illustrations, of an edition of the Holy Scriptures which amused and instructed our great-grandfathers and great-grandmothers when little boys

**THE IDLE THOUGHTS OF AN IDLE FELLOW.** 1st Edition. By JEROME K. JEROME. Author of "*On the Spot.*" A book for an Idle Hour. LONDON: Field &

JEROME, with his special private views, is a book all busy people should undoubtedly peruse."—*F*

**ON THE STAGE—AND OFF.** The brief career of a world-be-actor. Fifth Edition. By JEROME K. JEROME. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. (One Shilling.)

**THE AGE OF MARIE ANTOINETTE.** A sketch of the period of European revival, which claims amongst its representatives: Goethe, Prudhon, Gainsborough, and Mozart. By CHARLES NEWTON SCOTT, author of "The Portraits of Christianity," &c. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Two Shillings.]

**PRINCE BISMARCK'S MAP OF EUROPE.** By "CYLINDER." LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. (Sixpence.)

*Upwards of 300 Superb Illustrations (some beautifully hand-coloured).*

**KENSINGTON: PICTURESQUE AND HISTORICAL.** By W. J. LOFTIS, B.A., F.S.A., Author of "A History of London," &c., &c. Illustrated by W. LUKEN, JUN., from Original Drawings carefully finished on the spot and engraved in Paris. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. (1s. 5s.)

For the curious, a few PROOF copies of KENSINGTON: PICTURESQUE AND HISTORICAL at five guineas, bound in full morocco, have painted in water-colours on the front, under the gilt edges of the leaves, a couple of Kensington views, which, until the leaves are bent back at an angle, are invisible.

**KITTEN'S GOBLINS.** By MRS. DUNCAN DAVIDSON, of Tulloch. With a dozen whole-page illustrations by the authoress. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. (Five Shillings.)

**IS THERE ANY RESEMBLANCE BETWEEN SHAKESPEARE & BACON?** By C. F. S.

All the world's a stage,  
And all the men and women merely players.—*Shakespeare.*  
Modern play acting is but a toy, except when it is too biting and satirical.—*Bacon.*

LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. (Three-and-Sixpence.)

**TALES FROM THE LANDS OF NUTS & GRAPES: (SPANISH & PORTUGUESE FOLKLORE.)** By CHARLES SELLERS. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. (Half-a-Crown.)

**THE BAIRNS' ANNUAL** (for 1889-90) of Old-Fashioned Tales. Edited by ALICE CORRIAN. Illustrated with many original cuts and a coloured Frontispiece. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. (One Shilling.)

A delightful *mélange* of the old-fashioned fairy tales that delighted our grand-parents when bairns.

**A NEW SHILLING BOOK OF ALPHABETS, PLAIN AND ORNAMENTAL, ANCIENT AND MODERN.** For the use of Architects, Clergymen, Decorators, Designers, Draughtsmen, Teachers, &c. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. (One Shilling.)

abcdefghijklmnopqrstuvwxyz  
abcdefghijklmnopqrstuvwxyz  
abcdefghijklmnopqrstuvwxyz  
abcdefghijklmnopqrstuvwxyz

abcdefghijklmnopqrstuvwxyz

abcdefghijklmnopqrstuvwxyz

LE'DN-  
HALL  
PR'SS  
ABCD HXYZ

abcdefghijklmnopqrstuvwxyz

ABCDEFGHIJKLMNOPQRSTUVWXYZ



abcdefghijklmnopqrstuvwxyz



A B C D E F G H I J K L M N O P Q R S T U V W X Y Z



a b c d e f g h i j k l m n o p q r s t u v w x y z

a a b c d e f g h i j k l m n o p q r s t u v w x y z

— I 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 0 —



Specimens of Types from

The Leadenhall Press,

50, Leadenhall Street, London, E.C.



A PEARL OF ENGLISH RHETORIC.

THOMAS CARLYLE ON THE REPEAL OF THE UNION.

LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Sixpence]

---

THROUGH ENGLAND ON A SIDE-SADDLE IN THE

TIME OF WILLIAM & MARY; being the Diary of CELIA FLEMING.

With an explanatory Introduction by The Hon. Mrs. GRIFFITHS.

LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C.

[Twelve-and-Sixpence.]

---

MEN, MAIDENS & MANNERS A HUNDRED YEARS

AGO. By JOHN ASHTON. With thirty-four contemporary illustrations.

LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

---

PEOPLE WE MEET. By CHARLES F. RIDEAL. Illustrated by HARRY

PARKES. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C.

[One Shilling.]

A limited edition of 250 only, proof copies signed and numbered.

[Five Shillings.]

---

THE GRIEVANCES BETWEEN AUTHORS AND

PUBLISHERS, being the Report of the Conferences of the Incorporated Society of Authors held in Willis's Rooms, in March, 1887.

with Additional Matter and Summary. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C.

[Two Shillings.]

---

FIFTY-FIVE GUINEAS REWARD. A Sensational Story. By

FRED. C. MILFORD, Author of "Lost! A Day." Fifth Edition.

LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

---

THE DAWN OF THE TWENTIETH CENTURY:

1st January, 1901. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C.

[One Shilling.]

"Displays an exhaustive knowledge of the diplomatical relations between the different countries of Europe and of history in general."—*Morning Post*.

---

BEAUTY AND THE BEAST. By CHARLES LAMB. With an

Introduction by ANDREW LANG. Illustrated with eight beautiful steel plates engraved in facsimile from the original edition. LONDON:

Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C.

[Three-and-Sixpence.]

A charming book of equal interest to children and their elders.

One hundred signed copies only, containing a set of earliest open-letter proofs of the eight illustrations in red, and a duplicate set in brown.

[Ten-and-Sixpence: raised to Two Guineas.]

---

THE SEASONS. By JAMES THOMSON. With Four Illustrations

and extra Portrait printed direct from the original copperplates, engraved in 1792, and an Introductory Note by JOHN OLDCASTLE.

LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Sixteen-Pence.]

Having no more original copperplates of a suitable character, the publishers regretfully announce that they are unable to further continue this series. The three preceding issues are *Tristram Shandy*, *Sir Charles Grandison* and *Solomon Gessner*. The four make a handsome and interesting volume.

**ÆSOP REDIVIVUS:** Written for Boys and Girls between 6 and 106 Years of Age. By MARY BOYLE. Numerous Cuts. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One f.]

**SYBIL'S DUTCH DOLLS.** By F. S. JANET BURNE. Profusely Illustrated. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Two-and-Sixpence.]

An amusing book, rendered doubly amusing by the very numerous cuts being unmistakably jointed wooden dolls.

---

**THE DAME AND HER DONKEYS FIVE.**

Embellished with Thirty-one Beautifully Hand-Coloured Engravings  
LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]  
A humorous tale for children.

---

**EIGHT TALES OF FAIRY-LAND.** By LOUISE POIREZ. With "three times eight are twenty-four" illustrations by V. GERTRUDE MUNTZ. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Two-and-Sixpence.]

---

**GRAY'S ELEGY:** with Sixteen beautiful Illustrations by NORMAN PRESCOTT DAVIES, facsimiled from his original drawings in the possession, and published by the gracious permission of H. R. H. THE PRINCESS OF WALES. Bound in gold lettered vellum, with broad silken bands and strings. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Guinea.]

"A work of very great beauty."—*Leeds Mercury.*

---

**FLYING LEAVES FROM EAST AND WEST.** (Second Edition.) By EMILY PFEIFFER, author of "Sonnets," "Gerard's Monument," "Under the Aspens," "The Rhyme of the Lady of the Rock," &c., &c. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Six Shillings.]

"The best book written on the American continent."—*Academy.*

---

**SONNETS.** (Revised and Enlarged Edition.) By EMILY PFEIFFER, author of "Gerard's Monument," "Under the Aspens," "The Rhyme of the Lady of the Rock," "Flying Leaves from East and West," &c., &c. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Six Shillings.]

"They are, to our mind, among the finest in the language."  
—*Spectator.*

---

**I,000 QUAIN'T CUTS FROM BOOKS OF OTHER DAYS,** including Amusing Illustrations from Children's Story Books, Fables, Chap-books, &c., &c.; a Selection of Pictorial Initial Letters and Curious Designs and Ornaments from Original Wooden Blocks belonging to The Leadenhall Press. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Sixteen-Pence.]

A limited number printed on one side of the paper only at Two-and-Eightpence.

"A wonderful collection of entertaining old wood engravings . . . any one of these delights is worth the one-and-fourpence."  
—*Saturday Review.*

**POLITICAL WIT AND HUMOUR IN OUR OWN TIMES.** Collected and Edited by T. WILLIAMS. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

**A LOVER'S LITANIES.** By ERIC MACKAY, Author of "Love Letters of a Violinist" and "Gladys the Singer." LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, London, E.C. [Ten-and-Sixpence.]

**MODERN MEN.** By A MODERN MAID, CONTENTS: The Dessay of Courtesy, Our Partners, Our Fellow Boarders, Husbands and Brothers, The Vanity of Men, Men and Money Matters, Objectionable Lovers, &c., &c. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Two Shillings.]

A book in which modern men are amusingly abused.

**HOUSEKEEPING MADE EASY.** By a Lady. A simplified method of keeping accounts, arranged to commence from any date. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

*(Dedicated by gracious permission to Her Majesty the Queen.)*

**SONGS OF THE NORTH.** (New Edition.) Gathered together from the Highlands and Lowlands of Scotland. Edited by A. C. MACLEOD and HAROLD BOULTON. The Music arranged by MALCOLM LAWSON. Frontispiece "Proud Maisie," by FRED SANDYS. LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Twelve-and-Sixpence.]

"A book that singers will like to have and the public will be wise to get."—*The Scotsman.*

*A New Edition, Revised and Enlarged of*

**THE PERFECT WAY ; or, THE FINDING OF CHRIST.** (Now first published under the Authors' names.) By ANNA KINGSFORD, M.D. (Paris), and EDWARD MAITLAND, B.A. (Cantab.) LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [Twelve-and-Sixpence.]

"One of the most—perhaps the most—important and spirit-stirring of appeals to the highest instincts of mankind which modern European literature has evolved."—*Theosophist.*

**JOHN OLDCASTLE'S GUIDE FOR LITERARY BEGINNERS.** LONDON: Field & Tuer, The Leadenhall Press, E.C. [One Shilling.]

"Is the only practical and common sense book on the subject we know of."

\*\*\*\*\*

"With Bad Paper, one's Best is impossible."

## The Author's Paper

block form, fifty sheets of paper, fibrous and difficult to tear as a piece of linen, over which—being of unusual but not painful smoothness—the pen slips with perfect freedom. Easily detachable, the size of the sheets is about  $7\frac{3}{4} \times 8\frac{1}{2}$  in., and the price is only that usually charged for common scribbling paper. THE AUTHOR'S PAPER PAD may be comfortably used, whether at the desk, held in the hand, or resting on the knee. As being most convenient for both author and compositor, the paper is ruled the narrow way, and of course on one side only.—*Sixpence each : 5/- per dozen, ruled or plain.*















